

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

Chapter 1

Hluliwe : Kwalunga! Kwalunga! Are you awake?

Kwalunga : Yes mama I'm getting ready for school. Is there anything you want me to do for you?

Hluliwe : Jojo is dead.

(Jojo is or was my dog. I love him so much how did he die? He was fine last night)

(I ran outside to my mother)

Kwalunga : what happened mama? where is Jojo?

Hluliwe : I'm sorry my boy.

Mzwandile : I buried your dog down the river. Now pull yourself together and go to school.

Kwalunga : But Baba I wanted to bury him myself.

Mzwandile : Come on Kwalunga it was just a dog and it died now move on. Come on man!!!...
(He is screaming)

Hluliwe : Mzwandile please he is a kid.

Mzwandile : No Hluli he is 16 years old. He is a man he can't be whining over dead dogs.

(I shouldn't cry right? I am a man so I went back to my room grabbed my school bag)

Hluliwe : Kwalunga when you come back from school and you don't find me here I'll be at Ngudwini harvesting woods.

Kwalunga : my physics exam is this morning mama. I'll be home before 12h00.I'll go with you.

(My mother smiled and went back to the house)

(My mother has been through a lot my father has 2 more brothers and they don't get along the big brother hates my mother and his children are worse. They call my mother all sorts of names. My father fails to defend my mother from his family so to keep the peace he moved out from his home and he built us a

3 room house and a small rondavel. It's not our dream home but it's where our peace is.)

(My mother is their servant she cleans wash and cook for them. My father's brothers are both married but still my mother does all the duties and their wives get to relax)

(I finally come back home after a long and exhausting exam

Sponsored

wash and cook for them. My father's brothers are both married but still my mother does all the duties and their wives get to relax)

(I finally come back home after a long and exhausting exam my mother is home and my father is at work. My father works as a

delivery guy at some media company and he drives a bike)

Hluliwe : How was your exam mfan'wam?

(She asked with a smile on her face. My mother is a sweet woman. She deserves more than this)

Kwalunga : My exam was great mama you know that I'm very smart (I laugh)

Hluliwe : I know my boy I know.

Kwalunga : Next year I'm definitely going to matric

(My mother smiles)

Hluliwe : I'm so proud of you ndodana. Now go and change so that we can go.

(I nod and walk in)

Hluliwe : Do you want food? (She asked outside)

Kwalunga : No mama I'm fine.

Hluliwe : Ok please be quick Lunga.

(I changed took the axe and we began walking)

Kwalunga : mama who named me Kwalunga?

Hluliwe : Your father

Kwalunga : Why?

(Hluliwe sighed)

Hluliwe : Yazi mfan'wam I had four miscarriages as you know but you survived and your father said finally kwaze kwalunga so he named you Kwalunga.

(We spotted men walking around carrying guns with dogs I quickly looked for Jojo then I remembered that he is dead)

Man: Mama take your son and go back home you can't be here.

(We are both confused)

Man: The big snake is back and it's killing cows and dogs.

(We have a very dangerous snake here. Inhlwathiit killed cows and dogs. It's been a while so we thought it was gone but clearly not)

Hluliwe : Hau we thought it was gone.

Man: No somebody saw it yesterday it killed
2 cows and 3 dogs.

(could Jojo be one of those dogs?)

Hluliwe : We will go back home siyabonga.
Niqaphele.

Kwalunga : Jojo was killed by a snake mama.

Hluliwe : I think so too my boy your father
found him not far from home and he had a
wound.

(My dog didn't deserve to die like that)

Daily New African Novels Download Here:

WWW.eBooksDuck.Com



eBooks
Cat

Chapter 2

(We walked back home and we found my father fighting with his elder brother Manqoba)

Manqoba: Mzwandile you are nothing and you will die poor.

Mzwandile : And you have everything Manqoba?

Manqoba : Yes and I'm the one who will bury all of you ngoba aninalutho nogcwatswa yimi.

Mzwandile : Please leave my house Manqoba. I left home because of you your wife and your children. But you are still following me you come to my house and speak shit. Get out!! (He shouted)

Hluliwe : Manqoba please leave ngiyacela Madlula.

Manqoba : Shut up you witch!.(He shouted)

(My father threw the first punch they are fighting. I want to intervene but I can't)

(Baba u Manqoba's wife and his children are now here)

Basithembile: Mzwandile umenzani u baba?

(Yes Basithembile calls my father by his name. She is 19 years old but he calls his father by name)

maNcwane: Mzwandile leave my husband alone!!! (she shouts)

(maNcwane is Mangoba's wife)

Sthembele: Baba please stop that nibadala menibangaka.

(Sthembele is the youngest daughter. she is sweet sometimes)

(The following day)

(I woke up and when I opened the door I noticed something on the door It's written "Witch" the font is big)

Kwalunga : mama! Baba! (I shout knocking on the door)

(My mother opened)

Hluliwe : Your father is still sleeping

Sponsored

what do you want Lunga?

Kwalunga : mama look. (I pointed to the door)

Hluliwe : Oh my God (She said with her glossy eyes)

(I've never seen my mother so sad)

Mzwandile : What's going on?

(I showed my father. My mother threw her hands in the air and walked back in)

(I started cleaning the door. I know it's Basithembile who did this I just know it. I want to cry but I'm a man and my father said men don't cry)

(Later that day I had a study group to attend to. I'm writing my final exams and I'm preparing myself for Maths. I struggle with Maths so I need all the help I can get)

Kwalunga : Mama is Baba working night shift today.

Hluliwe : Yes mfan'wam

Kwalunga : Ok I have to attend my study group later. I will be home around 22h00 latest.

Hluliwe : If it gets late please sleep at your friend's house. It's really not safe at night.

Kwalunga : Are you serious Mah? (I asked smiling.)

Hluliwe : Yes. I know how much you love sleeping over at Lwandile's home (She said laughing)

Kwalunga : I don't like leaving you alone mama.

Hluliwe : I am never alone my boy and you will never be alone. I will look after you nangale kwethuna.

(I laugh. My mother loves saying that)

Hluliwe : Life will teach you to be a man at a very young age Lunga. You need to grab every opportunity that comes your way mfan'wam. You will need anything to survive. (She said staring at me)

(I nod my mother loves having deep conversations)

Hluliwe : Be brave (She said holding back her tears)

Kwalunga : I will go and pack my bag

Hluliwe : Challenges await you but I know you will overcome them Madlula wami omuhle. (She said)

(I noticed her tears now I'm worried)

Kwalunga : No mama I won't go. I will study on my own I see that you are sad because I'm leaving.

(She smiled and wiped her tears)

Hluliwe : Don't mind me. These are tears of joy I see how dedicated you are with your studies and it makes me so happy.

(I smile)

Hluliwe : Now go my son go (She whispers)

Chapter 3

(Later that day I arrived at my friend's house. They are really nice people. Lwandile's mother loves me so much)

Lwandile's mom: My son come in (She said giving me a hug)

Kwalunga : Ninjani kodwa Mah?

Lwandile's mom: Siyaphila mfan'wam how is Hluliwe? Angisamazi.

Kwalunga :She is fine Mah. Uthe ngikhonze.

Lwandile's mom : Good good. Tomorrow I will send her my steamed bread I know how much she loves it. (She said giggling)

(We laughed Lwandile walked in)

Lwandile : Lunga usufikile. Come we are about to begin.

Kwalunga : I will see you later Mah

(We walked to Lwandile's room. His room is stunning actually his home is stunning. It's one of the most beautiful houses here Kwa Maphumulo)

(As I walked in I froze when I saw my crush Zinzi she is a beautiful chubby woman with her chiskop. She is short and her flawless dark skin is amazing. She is very smart always comes on top at school)

(I cleared my throat and swallowed hard)

Zinzi : Hi Lunga

(Heavenly father she knows my name)

Kwalunga : Hi

Lwandile : Kwalunga please take a seat

(There are other students that I know here including Pinky the bubbly one. She talks a lot)

Pinky : How are we going to study with Kwalunga around though?

Lwandile : What do you mean?

Pinky : He is a destruction his looks are a destruction. We won't be able to concentrate. (She said rolling her eyes)

(Not this again)

Lwandile : See Lunga? I told you that you are every girl's crush (He said laughing)

Kwalunga : Oh please that's not true.

Pinky : Lunga trust me every girl wants you.
Bro you are handsome and your eyebrows ay
mfethu usidlisa ngamapayipi

Kwalunga : You guys said every girl right?

(I asked staring at Zinzi)

Zinzi : Well not me sorry.

(We laughed I'm a little bit disappointed
though)

(We studied almost the whole night)

Lwandile: Lunga asibaphelezele bafo.

Kwalunga : Yeah sure

(I kept staring at Zinzi on our way and she is
not even looking at me)

Zinzi : Kuyasha lapha (She said pointing)

Lwandile : Where?

(My heart almost stopped when I realized they're actually pointing at home)

Kwalunga : Lwandile u Mah

Sponsored

my mother is inside.

(I said and I sprinted to my way home)

(40 minutes later I arrived. There are people outside they are just standing there doing nothing to stop the fire some are crying saying "hhau kodwa ngo Hluliwe")

Kwalunga : Where is my mother?

(I asked moving around the crowd of people I want to go in)

Manqoba : Kwalunga don't!!!! (He screamed)

Kwalunga : I want my mother where is my mother?

(maNcwane is looking at me with eyes full of sadness)

maNcwane : I'm sorry Lunga I'm sorry we couldn't save your mother.

(My heart started racing I couldn't hear anything or anyone anymore I fainted)

(I woke up 2 hours later with my father next to me)

Mzwandile : Lunga I'm sorry about your mother mfan'wam. I don't know how are we going to live without her she was our pillar. She kept us together.

(I closed my eyes fighting back my tears)

Mzwandile : Indoda ayikhali Kwalunga. You are a man now. No matter what happens tears are never an option anger is never an option. Uwu Hlela wena u Madlula Mphumela Maqeda ka Nkani Kadabula iziziba. U Hangala. Don't be weak Life must go on. Do you hear me Kwalunga Hlela?

(I nod)

Mzwandile : Look at me when I'm talking to you!!(He snapped)

(I slowly lift up my head)

Mzwandile : Chin up Kwalunga Chin up!! (He shouted)

(I do as I'm told. I'm now staring at him)

Mzwandile : Kwalunga the worst is coming I just want to know if you are ready to overcome everything that is coming your way.

(He said with his hand on my shoulder)

Kwalunga : I'm ready baba

Mzwandile : You don't deserve all the things that are making their way to you but maybe one day everything will be more lucid and you will understand.

(The turmoil is driving me insane why can't he just get straight to the point and stop beating around the bush)

Kwalunga : I don't understand Madlula I find this conversation so incoherent.

Mzwandile : Get out of this bed and start behaving like a man that you are.

(I nod and get out of bed)

Chapter 4

(4 DAYS LATER)

Manqoba : There will be no funeral there is nothing to bury.

Mzwandile : Impossible

Mangoba : Everything burned down to ashes there are no bones. Nothing.

(My father is pacing the room he is sweating)

Mthunzi : He is right bafo The forensics confirmed.

(Mthunzi is my father's youngest brother)

Mzwandile : No!!! (He yelled)

maNcwane : Awuzosithethisa ke Mzwandile Your wife burned to ashes. If you want someone to blame It's her. She died due to her recklessness we told her countless times ukuthi ecime ikhandlela melala.

Mthunzi : maNcwane that is a bit harsh

(maMyeni walked in. she is Mthunzi's wife)

maMyeni : Bakwethu kahleni ngomsindo You are drawing unnecessary attention from the neighbors.

Manqoba : Our lives must go on. maKhumalo is gone and we can't bring her back.

Mzwandile : We will bury the ashes

(maNcwane clapped once)

Manqoba : My family won't be part of that funeral singcwabe umlotha? You are out of your mind Mzwandile.

Mzwandile : bafo ngiyacela this is my wife. She deserves a dignified funeral.

Manqoba : No Mzwandile I won't spend my money on some useless funeral.

Mzwandile : Mthunzi bafo ngiyacela. You do know that if i had money I was going give my wife a proper send off but I have nothing. They didn't pay me at work again.

(My father was right. He worked with no pay sometimes.)

Mthunzi: I don't know bafo. Manqoba is right having a funeral will be a waste of money. Money that you don't have.

Mzwandile : Kwalunga follow me.

(I followed him and we walked out)

(We went home. He is carrying a plastic and a shovel. We got home and he started

gathering the ashes he poured all the ashes into the plastic and asked me to follow me)

(He started digging a hole and filled it up with ashes)

Mzwandile : Lala kahle Khumalo Mntungwa
Mzilikazi kamaShobana. Lala uphumule
Mbulaz'omnyama.

(I guess this is my mother's funeral I don't believe this)

Mzwandile : Say your final goodbye to your mother Kwalunga

(I don't know what to say I'm so confused at the moment)

(I walked closer to my father I cleared my throat)

Kwalunga : Mama your death took me by surprise. I wish I didn't leave you alone that day. You may be gone from my sight but you are not gone from my heart

Sponsored

May the wind of heaven blow softly and whisper in your ear how much I love you.

(My tone is changing. I want to cry. my father shook my shoulders roughly)

Mzwandile : Don't do that Kwalunga Don't do that!! (He is shouting)

Kwalunga : I'm not crying baba I'm not crying. I promise.

Mzwandile : Good pull yourself together and start burying your mother.

(He means the ashes. He hands me a shovel)

Mzwandile : You are a man now Kwalungalet
that sink in.

(I nod and bury my mother's ashes)

(2 MONTHS LATER)

(I passed my Grade 11 with flying colors my
hard work paid off.)

Kwalunga : Baba my grandmother called
today I want to go and stay with her.

(My father sighed)

Mzwandile : Is staying here really that bad
mfan'wam?

Kwalunga : I can't stop thinking about my mother I want to heal and I need some time with myself to think. Going to uMlazi will really help me.

Mzwandile : What about school Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : I don't know baba

Mzwandile : What do you mean by that?

Kwalunga : Baba I'm not coping please allow me to be a man and decide what's best for myself please.

Mzwandile : Kwalunga school is very important maybe if I went to school our lives would have been different.

Kwalunga : If I stay here I won't pass my matric trust me baba.

Mzwandile : Kwalunga don't say that you know my son the power of tongue is something else be careful of what you say.

Kwalunga : Baba I will find a way to complete my matric.

Mzwandile : It's all about dedication son put your mind to it and trust me you will make it.

(I sigh)

Kwalunga : It's ok. Let me visit my grandmother and I will come back.

Mzwandile : Now that's better Kwalunga you are the future of this family.

Kwalunga : I'm trying my best to meet your expectations of me Baba

Mzwandile : You are in the right lane. Just finish your matric.

Kwalunga : I will baba.

Mzwandile : I am proud of you son you are the best thing that ever happened to our lives.

Kwalunga : I will continue making you proud.

Mzwandile : When are you planning to visit your grandmother then?

Kwalunga : Tomorrow Baba Ngizogibela i bus ka 08h00.

Mzwandile : This should cover your trip.

(He said giving me R100)

Kwalunga : Ngiyabonga Baba

Mzwandile : Ungikhonzele ku Mkhwekazi wami.

Kwalunga : I will baba I need to go and see someone before it gets dark.

Mzwandile : A girl?

(My eyes are wide open)

Kwalunga : No baba! (I laughed)

Mzwandile : You are a handsome young man and I'm sure every girl wants you so I get it
Lunga (He laughed)

(I don't remember when was the last time that I actually laughed like this with my father.)

Kwalunga : There is no girl baba eish.

Mzwandile That "eish" answers my question go to your girlfriend Kwalunga.

(I laughed and walked out)

Chapter 5

(I'm actually on my way to see Zinzi she stays a bit far from my home)

Zinzi: Lunga!!

(I turned around it's her. where is she coming from?)

Kwalunga : Zinzi where are you coming from?

Zinzi : From the shop.I went to buy airtime and tomatoes

Kwalunga : Ok

(I'm staring at her she makes me nervous)

Zinzi : Where are you going?

Kwalunga : Home

(She looks at me confused)

Kwalunga : But your home is that side

Kwalunga : No I mean ngiya estolo. I mean at Lwan....You know what? Never mind

(I was so nervous and I couldn't speak)

Zinzi : Are you ok? I know you miss your mother Lunga but she is with you my grandm...

Kwalunga : No this is not about my mother (I cutted before she finished)

Zinzi : Then what's wrong?

Kwalunga : You make me nervous Zinzi

Zinzi : Oh please that's not true.

Kwalunga : I mean it Zinzi I lo lov (Im stuttering)

(Why does she make me so nervous?)

Zinzi: You what?

Kwalunga : dammit! I love you Zinzi.

(She is so shocked she dropped a plastic of tomatoes on the ground I quickly picked it up)

Zinzi: You what?

Kwalunga : I love you Zinzi Zondi and I love you so much.

(Why is she crying now?)

Kwalunga : I shouldn't have said that I'm sorry I'm really sorry.

Zinzi : Are you sure that you love me?

Kwalunga : I have never been so sure.

Zinzi : No Lunga but how? I mean I'm not even your type.

Kwalunga : You are not my type?

Zinzi : Lunga you are so handsome to fall in love with a girl like me. Everyone thinks I'm ugly but here you are A man of every girl's dream telling me that he loves me.

Kwalunga : You are my sunflower you are beautiful and you drive me crazy sthandwa sami ngiyakuthanda.

(She blushed

Sponsored

I wiped her tears)

Kwalunga : I love you (I whispered)

(She shook her head and started crying again)

Zinzi : I can't be seen with a man like you you are very handsome for me when girls from school see me with you they will assume the worst. They will accuse me of witchcraft. No Lunga.

Kwalunga : Zinzi I want you I don't care what people say.

(I slowly kissed her tears away she froze)

Kwalunga : I'm going away for a few days. I'm hoping that will give you some time to

think about this I wanted to tell you this before I go.

Zinzi : Are you leaving m.... I mean where are you going? (She stutters and rubs her face with her hands)

Kwalunga : I'm not leaving you and I will never leave you (I hold her hands her hands are warm)

Zinzi :When are you coming back?

(She is suddenly worried)

Kwalunga : In a week

Zinzi : You promise?

Kwalunga : I promise sunflower

(She smiles)

Zinzi : I need to get going it's getting late.

(She said walking away)

Kwalunga : Zinzi

Zinzi : Yes

Kwalunga : Your tomatoes

Zinzi : Oh Thank you

(I handed the tomatoes to her and squeezed her hands)

Kwalunga : I love you don't forget that.

(I said walking away)

(THE FOLLOWING DAY)

Kwalunga : Baba I'm going now.

Mzwandile : Please take a seat

(I am so going to be late)

Mzwandile : I will only take two minutes of your time.

Kwalunga : It's ok baba I can spare you a few minutes.

Mzwandile : Kwalunga I love you my son and don't ever forget that. Whatever happens keep going do not back down. Do whatever needs to be done to survive be a man. You are not weak. Face all your hardships with your head up. Do you hear me?

(I rub the back of my neck and try to pull on a smile)

Kwalunga : Yebo baba

(He stared at his feet for a few seconds and he quickly brought his gaze back to me)

Mzwandile : Tomorrow is not looking good.
Now go my son go.

Kwalunga : Baba are you going to be fine?

Mzwandile : Yes (He smiles)

Kwalunga : Are you sure? Because I can stay really.

Mzwandile : You can go. I'm going to be fine I promise.

(He hugged me and I walked out)

Chapter 6

(3 hours later I arrived at uMlazi)

Kwalunga : Gogo how are you?

Gogo: Amahlala akhona mzikulu how is your father?

(My grandmother is very bubbly but today she is different she is not her usual self)

Kwalunga : He is fine gogo uthe ngikhonze.

Gogo: It saddens me that I couldn't come for my daughter's funeral.

Kwalunga : There was no funeral gogo.

(She is shocked)

Gogo: Kwalunga what do you mean there was no funeral for my daughter?

(I can see that my grandmother is not well and I don't want to stress her)

Kwalunga : I mean it was only us as family at her funeral It was nothing big.

Gogo: Oh ok

Kwalunga : Gogo are you ok?

(Her face looked swollen)

Kwalunga : Gogo why uvuvukele ebusweni?

Gogo : I'm sick mzukulu wami. It's been weeks now.

(My mouth gapes open)

Kwalunga : Who is looking after you?

Gogo : Myself (She softly laughed)

Kwalunga : Gogo when was the last time Aunt Lulekiwe visited you?

(She slowly shakes her head and smiles)

Gogo : Forget about it mzukulu

Kwalunga : Did you eat kodwa gogo?

Gogo: Yes

(She is not telling the truth. She can hardly move her fingers then how did she manage to make herself something to eat)

Gogo: Ngicela nje ukugeza

Kwalunga : Yes sure gogo. I'll help you to get to the bathroom

(I pulled a duvet and the smell suffocated the whole room. I don't want her to feel bad so I just smiled at her and helped her up. I noticed her body was covered in abnormal lumps. She flinched

Sponsored

she was in pain)

(She can hardly move. Going to the bathroom is a mission impossible)

Kwalunga : This is not going to work.I'll see what else we can do.

(I walked to the bathroom and I saw a plastic basin I filled it with lukewarm water and headed back to her room)

(Now my question is how is she going to bath herself?)

(I don't know but I quickly remembered my father's words. "Challenges await you Kwalunga")

Kwalunga : Lord give me strength (I muttered)

(I started bathing my grandmother she used my shoulder to balance herself. I slowly dressed her up and put her on a chair and changed her messed up bedding)

Gogo : Ngiyabonga mzukulu wami (She said tears rolling down her face)

Kwalunga : It's ok Gogo (I said as I swepted my gaze from her face)

(I finished doing her bed and helped her back to bed)

Kwalunga : I'll go and wash these (I said walking out with her clothes and her sheets)

(Deep down I want to cry but I just can't. The "Men don't cry" idea from my dad really found a place in me)

(I finished washing her clothes and I cleaned up the house)

Kwalunga : Gogo what would you like to eat?

Gogo : I can't stomach anything Lunga

Kwalunga : I will buy you Amahewu then.

Gogo : Ok give me my bag. it inside my wardrobe. Yes that one the green one.

(She gave me money. I took her phone with me and I walked out)

Chapter 7

(KwaZulu-Natal Durban Umlazi. I grew up here and 7 years later my parents got married so we moved to Kwa Maphumulo where my home is. Nothing has really changed from the last time i visited my grandmother but I love it here and I love my grandmother.)

(I took out my grandmother's phone and called aunt Lulekiwe. It's ringing)

Lulekiwe : Yebo (She answered)

Kwalunga : Mam'ncane gogo is sick.

Lulekiwe : Who am I speaking to?

Kwalunga : You are speaking to Kwalunga

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : Mamncane usekhona?

(She cleared her throat)

Lulekiwe: Yes Kwalunga use Mlazi?

Kwalunga : Yes Mah and I found Gogo very sick.

(She sighed)

Lulekiwe: Ok I will see what I can do.

Kwalunga : You need to come and look after Gogo because I need to go back to Kwa Maphumulo and I can't leave her alone.

Lulekiwe : Ok fine. I'm coming soon.

(She said and hung up the phone)

(My grandmother managed to finish a glass of Amahewu and I went to bed)

THE NEXT MORNING

(I had a terrible dream last night so I woke up and checked on Gogo. The weather is very bad today and the rain is very heavy outside)

Kwalunga : Gogo ulale kahle?

Gogo : Very well mzungu

(I smiled)

Gogo : mzungu awuvulele ugogo umsakazo.

Kwalunga : Ukhozi fm? (I laughed)

(She softly laughed)

Gogo : Yes please

(I turned on her small radio)

Gogo : You are a very handsome young man and you are so full of respect. May God bless you mzukulu.

(I just smiled)

(Something caught my attention on the radio. The presenter mentioned an accident between a armored truck and a motorbike. They said the accident took place in Umngeni road and 2 people succumbed to death)

(I suddenly feel nervous and think of my father)

Gogo : Hhau ngezingane zabantu

Kwalunga : It's bad. Anyway

Sponsored

I'm going to make you some breakfast.

(My phone rang it's Sthembele)

Kwalunga : Hello (I answered)

Sthembele : You need to come back home.
Your father is no more.

(Where did I go wrong why is all this happening to me? Where is this God? Does he remember me? Is it because I stopped going to church and this is his way of punishing me? I'm only 16 why am I suffering this much?)

Kwalunga : What happened?

Sthembele: He got involved in an accident this morning.

Kwalunga : The Umgeni accident?

Sthembele: Yes how did you know?

(I hung up without answering her question)

Kwalunga : Sengintandane Gogo

(I walked out I don't even want to look at my grandmother)

(I want to cry but I can't. I feel like my father is watching me and he will see me cry. I have lost so much already what do i do now?)

Chapter 8

(We buried my father and Baba u Manqoba forced me to drop out of school and look after my grandmother who was sick because

Aunt Lulekiwe made it clear that she won't be able to take care of my grandmother. Her excuse was "My job requires a lot of time". So I dropped out but 4 months later my grandmother passed away. Everyone that I love left me at the age of 16. Year 2000 taught me to be a man at a very young age just as my mother predicted before she burned to death)

(I'm in pieces it's tearing me up but I am man and men don't back down they keep going just as my father said. Now I only have Zinzi. My Sunflower She wears rose-colored glasses when it comes to life. She is an amazing young woman and sometimes I wish I can see the world as she does.)

(I continued to look after my grandmother's house after her death. I had nothing but at

least Baba u Mthunzi sent me R300 every month)

Zinzi : When are you coming back home?

Kwalunga : I can't sthandwa sami you know the story.

Zinzi : Lunga Life is based on how you look at it it is really not that bad.

(She said moving her hands through the air as she always does.)

Kwalunga : I know but I will come back some other time. LookSunflower. I want a life with you not with those people.

Zinzi : Those people (She emphasized) are your family Lunga.

Kwalunga : Then I guess I don't have a family

Zinzi : Don't say that Lunga please

Kwalunga : I'm sorry but it's true. Zinzi you have no idea what those people did to me

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : I have an interview tomorrow

Zinzi : That's nice where?

Kwalunga : e Pinetown. It's a new company for Italians

(Her eyes are wide open)

Zinzi : No Lunga how much do you know about that company?

Kwalunga : I don't need to know anything about them I just need a job Zinzi and it's not like I have matric so I'll just take any job that comes my way.

Zinzi : What is the name of the company?

Kwalunga : True Red Investigators

Zinzi : Investigators? (She is shocked)

Kwalunga : Yes

Zinzi : So what are you going to do there?

Kwalunga : I'll do the cleaning

Zinzi : Ok I understand.

Kwalunga : I promise you my Sunflower one day I will get a better job and I will take you to university.

(Zinzi was a bright kid at school but in matric she felt sick and she was in and out of hospitals. She did pass her matric but not enough to get a bursary as she wished)

(I was so scared and I thought I was going to lose her)

Zinzi : I know you will my love (She smiled)

Kwalunga : Good my love (She smiled)

Kwalunga : Good now let's go to bed. I have an interview tomorrow. (I laughed)

Zinzi : Tomorrow I am going back home.

Kwalunga : So soon?

(She laughed)

Zinzi : Lunga I have already spent 3 days with you and if I stay one more day then I swear my mom will kill me.

(I kissed her from her lips down to her neck.It's been six years and it was time I entered my territory. I ran my hand to her breast and she pushed it away)

Zinzi : No.

Kwalunga : Why not? Zinziit's been six years. I need you Sunflower

Zinzi : I'm not ready to have sex.

(I clenched my teeth and sighed. Zinzi is being ridiculous right now.)

Kwalunga : Zinzi come on we are both adults here. Will you ever be ready?

Zinzi : Not anytime soon. Please respect that.

Kwalunga : Ok.

(I said and walked straight to my room)

Zinzi : I was raped by my father.

(I was shocked. I slowly turned my face and Zinzi was leaning on a door frame tears streaming down her face.)

Zinzi : I told him to stop I told him to stop but he forced his dick inside me. I can still

smell his breath. The smell of nicotine. I told him countless times to stop but he kept coming back and back.

(There is anger in her tone and I don't know how to react.)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry Zinzi I really am sorry.

Zinzi : You have to believe me Lunga. Please believe me.

Kwalunga : Of course I believe you Sunflower come here.

Zinzi : Nobody believed me. Even after that bastard committed suicide and left a note with all the things he did to me still nobody believed me instead they accused me of killing him. My mother believed that I was the one who wrote that note.

(I hugged her. I wanted to take her pain and make it mine. I wanted to extricate her from the anger and fear.)

Zinzi : Have sex with me. Come and sleep with me Lunga.

(She said undressing herself. Tears running down her face.)

Kwalunga : Stop Zinzi just stop.

Zinzi : What? You don't want me now? Do I disgust you because I just told you that I was raped? Is th...

Kwalunga : No. Zinzi I love you so much. We will have sex when the time is right. You need to heal and I will give you all the time in the world to do so I'm not going anywhere.

(She smiled)

Kwalunga : Come let's go to bed and get some sleep.

(How do I take her pain and make it mine?
How do I change her past and make her feel better?)

Chapter 9

(Zinzi is my Sunflower. She gave me money for transport and hours later I was looking around for True Red Investigators. I asked around and no one knew anything about that place. I found it eventually.)

(I found 3 gentlemen and they were very busy on their computers)

(I cleared my throat)

Kwalunga : Hi

First guy: You must be Kwalunga please come in.

Kwalunga : I am.

(I'm feeling nervous)

2nd guy: Did you get lost? (He asked laughing)

Kwalunga : Yeah just a little.

(They all laughed)

3rd guy: My name is Anthony Caldo This is Godfrey Zulu and over there is our manager Mr Thomas Krane.

Thomas : There is one more missing. Tina Harris but she is late today actually she is always late.

(We all laughed)

Anthony : Welcome to True Red Investigators Kalunga (He laughed while mispronouncing my name)

Kwalunga : Call me Lunga

Thomas : Lunga. That's better

(They really seem like nice people and I'm glad there is a Zulu around who speaks IsiZulu not that I mind English)

Thomas : Lunga please follow me

(I followed him to his office and we sat down)

Thomas : Mr Hlela I welcome you once again. Your job is going to be very much simple around here you will assist us with office cleaning and coffee (He ran his fingers through his hair)

Kwalunga : Thank you Mr Krane. I really appreciate this.

(He gave me a quick smile)

Thomas : Now your contract. This is actually a 3 months contract. We are going back to Italy in 3 months. we are here to wrap up some investigation then we are going back.

(I felt my world shutting down)

Kwalunga : Oh ok

Thomas : Look at it and if you have any questions my door is open.

(He said handing me my contract.)

(It's just two pages I quickly look at it. I was shocked looking at my earnings. These Italians are going to pay me R7 000 just for cleaning and making coffee? No maybe they meant R700)

(My mouth gapes open)

Thomas : Is there anything wrong?

Kwalunga : My salary. I think you made a mistake. R7 000?

Thomas : Look Lunga

Sponsored

as I said there's nothing much you will do here.

Kwalunga : Precisely my point so why are you giving me so much money?

(He sighed in relief)

Thomas : man you almost gave me a heart attack (He laughed)

Thomas : You deserve it. Now go and grab something to eat before you start working. Zulu will show you our kitchen.

(I quickly signed my contract and walked out)

(My first day at work was amazing and I couldn't wait to tell Zinzi all about it as soon as i got home I called her)

Zinzi : How was the interview?

(Now that she reminds me I remember that there was no interview)

Kwalunga : There was no interview Sunflower.

Zinzi : I'm so sorry Lunga but I promise you something else will come up.

(I laughed she is so sweet)

Kwalunga : Zinzi I got the job but it's a 3 months contract they are going back to Italy.

Zinzi : It doesn't matter babe
Congratulations. Wow I'm happy for you.

Kwalunga : My salary is R 7000 Zinzi.

Zinzi : What? Unamanga Lunga.

Kwalunga : I'm telling you Sunflower I was so shocked.

Zinzi : You see? I told you life is really not that bad.

Kwalunga : Jah! Jah! Uhambe kanjani kodwa sthandwa sami?

Zinzi :Kahle kakhulu my love and I'm sorry about ye....

Kwalunga : Zinzi you don't have to apologize. You don't owe that to anyone. (I cutted her before she finished)

Zinzi : I miss you so much.

Kwalunga : I miss you too Sunflower and I love you so much.

(We spoke for 20 minutes and my airtime ran out.)

Chapter 10

3 MONTHS LATER

(At True Red Investigators)

(The time reads 09h00am. 08th of November 2006. It's my last day at True Red Investigators. It's been a great journey but

this is it. I'm going to miss them especially Anthony. He is that one character but I'm going to miss their money more than anything.)

(I'm busy mopping Thomas's office. They are holding a meeting and all of them are here)

Tina: This is another dead end Tommy.

(She calls Thomas by Tommy. At first I thought that they were dating but no it was strictly business.)

Godfrey : Are you sure that we didn't leave any stone unturned?

Anthony : We didn't . We investigated the ex husband and all his friends but still nothing.

Godfrey : Tina is right. This is another dead end. Fuck!!. (He snapped)

Thomas : Who kidnapped her? Shit! This is frustrating (He is angry)

(They've been running some investigation about a woman who they believe is kidnapped by her ex husband)

(I cleared my throat)

Kwalunga : May I please say something?

Thomas : Yes Lung. say it.

Godfrey : He knows nothing about investigations.

(Godfrey said throwing his hands in the air)

Thomas : Zulu please Not now.

(I stopped mopping and stared at them. Now I'm nervous)

Kwalunga : So the ex wife is missing?

Thomas : Yes

Kwalunga : You didn't find anything on her ex husband?

Anthony : No Nothing.

Kwalunga : The ex husband is he married now to someone else?

(They are looking at each other)

Thomas : Yes

Kwalunga : Then go for his wife she might know something about the ex wife.

(With that said I continued mopping the floor)

Thomas : Why didn't we think of that? wow Lunga I'm impressed.

(Tina is jumping up and down with excitement. She gave me a tight hug)

Tina : You are a genius.

Kwalunga : I try (I shrug)

Thomas : Guys let's get out of here.

(They all left the office)

(I left the office and said goodbye to Baba u Mdlalose. He is the security of the company. He reminds me so much of my father and he is tense too)

Mdlalose : So this is it?

Kwalunga : Yebo baba. My work here is done

Mdlalose : I hope to see you again soon
Madlula you are a wonderful man.

Kwalunga : Ngiyabonga baba I'm going to miss you.

Mdlalose : Me too mfan'wam. Take care of yourself

Kwalunga : Do the same baba.

(I walked all the way to the taxi rank. I'm feeling tired and drained)

(I finally arrived home and took out my key to unlock the door but I noticed that it's open. I walked in and the house was almost empty. They broke in. I quickly checked for my money under the mattress and it was gone)

(I had a bank account but I withdrew all my money and kept it at home because I didn't trust my bank. Weird right? I know. Now I just lost R6 500)

(All the appliances are gone I sighed and took out my phone. I need to contact Zinzi she has a way of making me feel better)

Kwalunga : Hi Zinzi

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : Zinzi!

Zinzi : You sound down. Are you ok?

Kwalunga : They broke in Zinzi and took all my money

Zinzi : Oh God sthandwa sami

Sponsored

she has a way of making me feel better)

Kwalunga : Hi Zinzi

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : Zinzi!

Zinzi : You sound down. Are you ok?

Kwalunga : They broke in Zinzi and took all my money

Zinzi : Oh God sthandwa sami I'm sorry.

Kwalunga :It's ok

Zinzi : Kuphuma ibhadi my love maybe something great is coming your way.

(I told you that she has a way of making me feel better. The way she looks at life is quite different but amazing)

Kwalunga : Maybe or maybe not. Life is always hard on me but I'm not complaining.

Zinzi : Everything is going to be fine Lunga Kuz.. (silent)

Kwalunga : Zinzi are you still there?

(Silent. Dammit! My airtime ran out. I hope my salary will get in soon)

(I tossed my cellphone under my pillow. I don't know where to start The house is upside down.)

(My phone rings)

Kwalunga : Zinzi? (I answered)

The person : Sorry man but I'm not Zinz.
It's me Thomas.

Kwalunga : Oh Mr Krane Hi.

Thomas : Tell me something how long can it take for you to get to TRI?

Kwalunga : TRI?

(He is confusing me)

Thomas : Sorry I mean True Red
Investigators.

Kwalunga : Is there anything wrong?

Thomas : No of course not.

Kwalunga : I don't have money Mr Krane.

Thomas : Shit! We forgot to transfer your
money I'm sorry Lunga. Look send me your
location and I'll send a driver.

(This is more serious than I thought)

Kwalunga : Ok no problem

(He hung up. Now I need to borrow airtime from Cell C because I don't have data)

(I received my advance airtime and I sent my location to Thomas)

Chapter 11

(2 hours later I received a call from Godfrey telling me to come out. He was driving alone)

Kwalunga : Godfrey zithini manje?

Godfrey : No bro wam there's nothing wrong.

Kwalunga : Are you sure? Angiyi nje koshushiswa lapha e Red?

(Godfrey laughed)

Godfrey : No Thomas wants to talk to you about something.

Kwalunga : Something like what?

Godfrey : I don't know man why don't you find out for yourself?

(I don't know but Godfrey seems really unhappy. Is it about their investigation?)

Kwalunga : So how did you score a job with the Italians?

Godfrey : Kwalunga I worked really hard to be where I am. I didn't get this job on a silver platter.

(There is something about his tone. Why is he getting all so worked up?)

Kwalunga : I see but that doesn't answer my question. Not that I care anyway

(He tightened his jaws. Again I don't care. Now I'm sure that this guy doesn't like me and I'm grateful this is my last day I get to see him)

*Message alert *

(Thank God it was my salary at least one positive thing just happened today.)

(Finally we arrived at TRI. I got out of the car first leaving Godfrey behind and I went straight inside)

(I found Thomas and Tina. I glanced at the clock and it read 17h42)

Kwalunga : Why am I here Mr Krane and Ms Harris?

(Thomas cleared his throat)

Thomas : Lunga I have a request.

(Godfrey walked in and he seemed very tense)

Kwalunga : Request?

Tina : Firstly our investigation was a success and all thanks to you. (She smiled)

(Godfrey laughed but it sounded fake)

Godfrey : Tina You give this guy way too much credit.

(I knew he doesn't like me)

Thomas : He thought of something that you failed to think of G so yes he deserves all the credit. Lunga you did a wonderful job and which is why I want you to join the True Red Investigators team.

(I'm shocked. No he is probably kidding)

Godfrey : What? (His eyes are wide open)

Kwalunga : I don't understand Thomas I mean what do I know about investigating?

Tina : You know more than you think Lunga The kidnapping case was wrapped up today because you

Sponsored

you Lunga helped us.

Godfrey : Not you too Tina does Anthony know anything about this meeting?

Thomas : Yes and actually it was his idea that we hire Lunga to join our team.

Godfrey : Oh is that it? So I guess I'm the only one who knew nothing about this. Is this how we do things now Thomas huh?

(Godfrey felt betrayed and he is not pleased at all.)

Thomas : Godfrey I'm sorry that you feel some type of way but this is not about you. This is about what's best for True Red.

(Godfrey swallowed hard and rubbed his palms together)

Tina : We will mentor you Lunga.

Thomas : Exactly. We will teach you everything that you need to know.

Kwalunga : But you guys are going back to Italy.

Thomas : Do you have a passport?

(I can't believe this is happening.)

Kwalunga : Why would I need a passport?

Thomas : Because right now I am offering you a job as an undercover agent in Italy and for you to join us in Italy you n.....

Kwalunga : Thomas. I get it and to answer your questions. No I don't have a passport (I cutted him)

Thomas : We need to get you one. Immediately.

Kwalunga : Thomas I have a life here and I can't just pack my things and move to another country.

Thomas : How much do you want? Name your prize Lunga.

(Are these people crazy?)

Tina : Lunga this is an amazing opportunity to change your life around. Take it.

(I suddenly remembered what my parents said to me. "You will need anything to survive". Is this what they meant?)

Kwalunga : No Tina. I have someone that I can't leave behind.

(Thomas opened a briefcase and pushed it towards me.)

Thomas : R 500 000. All there and it's all yours. Please just take this job.

(R500 000? To take his job offer. This is insane.)

(I just laughed)

Kwalunga : Krane This is crazy.

Thomas : Then this is how crazy I need you.

(I sighed)

Kwalunga : Ok fine!

(Godfrey walked out. That is how much he hates me right now. He is going on my list of people to avoid if I'm going to be working here.)

Tina : I'll steer clear of that one if I were you. (She said pointing out using her head)

(She is referring to Godfrey. She sees it too.)

Kwalunga : I guess. Thomas I know nothing about these investigations. How am I supposed to do this job?

(I'm asking them for the second time that is how worried I am)

Thomas : You will get the hang of it in a week. Anthony will be your mentor. He did a great job with Tina.

(Tina's tongue popped out sweeping across the corner of her mouth)

(I breathe in and out. As much as I appreciate this opportunity But truth be told I'm nervous. Very nervous.)

Thomas : Tomorrow You need to get your passport sorted. Tina can you get that done?

Tina : Sure thing.

(Now my heart is racing. I'm leaving in 4 days. 4 days.)

Kwalunga : Isn't that too soon?

Thomas : I understand that you need more time to think about this but time is what we don't have Lunga. Our work here is done and dusted. We need to fly back to Italy.

Tina : Everything is going to be fine. You will see. (She smiled)

Thomas : Tina please organize a driver for him to take him back home .

Tina : On it.

Chapter 12

(2 DAYS LATER)

(My passport was ready. I took my R500 000 and headed straight home. Kwa Maphumulo. 3 hours later I arrived.)

maNcwane : Hau asisakwazi bo weee
Kwalunga.

(It's not like you care woman.)

Manqoba : The city life was too much for you and you decided to come back. I always knew that you would come back. You have nothing just like your father and uyoze ufe nawe ungena lutho.

(I laughed a little)

Kwalunga : Baba that is not the reason I am here.

Manqoba : Unamanga. There is only one reason that brought you back here. Indlala.

Kwalunga : Ngifuna ukuyokhokha ilobola kwa Zondi.

Mthunzi : What? (He asked walking in with his eyes wide open)

(Manqoba and his wife are both laughing)

maNcwane : You are going crazy wena ngane ka Mzwandile.

Kwalunga : Baba u Mthunzi. Please do this for me.

(Mthunzi laughs)

Mthunzi : Yes I will. One day

Kwalunga : No. Tomorrow actually.

(Whaaaaaat!?. They asked in unison)

Kwalunga : Yes and Thank you Baba.

Mthunzi : Are you serious?

Kwalunga : Yes baba.

Manqoba : ilobola lidinga imali.

Kwalunga : Money is not a problem. I need to do this before I move to Italy

maNcwane : Wee Mthunzi please take this boy to Bhubesi. He is losing it.

(Bhubesi is a very well known traditional healer)

Kwalunga : I need to go and see someone.
Please excuse me.

(I walked out. I had to see Zinzi)

Zinzi : Babe I can't believe that you are
here.

(She is so happy to see me. We met in our
usual spot eNgudwini river. This is where we
usually meet up because "She can't be seen
with a man ".

Kwalunga : I missed you so much Sunflower

(I don't know how to break the news and I'm
nervous)

Zinzi : I missed you too Sthandwa sam

(I took a deep breath)

Kwalunga : I have something to tell you

(She seems confused now)

Zinzi : Jah?

Kwalunga : I got a job

Zinzi : Another one?

Kwalunga : Well sort of

Zinzi : You don't seem happy about it

Kwalunga : I am. It's just that... (I sigh) It will break your heart.

Zinzi : Break my heart? How? I don't understand.

Kwalunga : Zinzi I'm moving to Italy

Zinzi : Are you serious babe?

(She sounds excited and I didn't expect that.)

Kwalunga : Yes

Sponsored

The Italians offered me a job as an undercover agent.

Zinzi : That's amazing Lunga. Wow. I'm happy for you.

Kwalunga : There is more

Zinzi : What? Don't tell me you turned them down.

Kwalunga : I didn't. Obaba are coming to pay ilobola for you tomorrow.

(She laughed. She thinks this is a joke)

Zinzi : Musa ukudlala ngami wena.

Kwalunga : I'm serious. When I come back from Italy I want us to get married.

Zinzi : Wait. Are you serious?

Kwalunga : I'm serious. I want a life with you Zinzi. Thomas gave me some money and ngizokhokha ilobola ngayo.

(She is in tears)

Zinzi : I don't know what to say.

Kwalunga : Just say yes Sunflower. Please.

Zinzi : Life is too short Lunga and if I have to spend the rest of what I have with you then so be it. (She said staring into space)

Kwalunga : Is that a yes?

Zinzi : Yes my love.

(She kissed me and I fell more in love with her)

Kwalunga : I love you.

Zinzi : No. I love you.

(THE FOLLOWING DAY)

Manqoba : This is a waste of time. This boy doesn't have money.

Kwalunga : Please leave all this money at Zondi's. R400 000. All there.

(Now they look like statues with their eyes wide open)

Manqoba : Usurobha ama bank wena mfana. Mthunzi please call the police.

Kwalunga : Please let's get this done because I need to go back to uMlazi today.

Manqoba : This is crazy and I'm not going to be part of it (He said heading out)

(I quickly look at Mthunzi.)

Mthunzi : Manqoba please. Ucelwa yimi. Let's do this one thing for this boy.

Manqoba : Siyolobola ngemali yokwebiwa?

Kwalunga : No baba I didn't s...

Manqoba : Shut up!! (He cutted me)

maMyeni: Baba ka Basithembile please. Do this for him. You have nothing to lose here.

Manqoba : (He rubbed his face) Ok fine.

Mthunzi : You will stay in the car Kwalunga . You can't go in.

Manqoba : Mthunzi are you not worried about this money? Because I am.

Kwalunga : I worked for it.

Manqoba : Stop lying to us. Wena lem...

Mthunzi : Bafo please leave this boy alone.If he got this money in the wrong way then indaba yakhe leyo. (He cutted him before he finished)

(I shook my head and we left the house)

(I stayed inside the car and they went for lobola negotiations)

Mthunzi :Ziyakhuleka izintandane zaka Hlela o Madlula.sikhulekile ekhaya ko Zondi ko Nondaba. Sizocela isihlobo esihle. Siphethe izinkomo zephakethe.

(He went on and on until I saw two men coming towards them at the gate and he showed them in.)

(I sighed in relief)

(It's been an hour and exactly 38 minutes and they are still inside. My phone rings and it's Zinzi.)

Kwalunga : Zinzi What's going on.

Zinzi : They paid everything sthandwa sami. I don't believe this.

(She is over the moon)

Zinzi : You are worth every cent and you deserved more than that.

Zinzi : I love you so much

Kwalunga : You are my life.

Zinzi : What time are you leaving?

(Mthunzi and Manqoba are making their way back.)

Kwalunga : I will call you before I go.

Zinzi : I will ensure that I see you before you leave.

Kwalunga : I love you.

Zinzi : I need to go babe.I love you more.

(She hung up)

Manqoba : Sesi yokuvashela ejele ke mfana with brown bread ne tin lika fish.

Kwalunga : I didn't steal that money Baba.
Anyway ngiyabonga.

Mthunzi : Everything went well and they were
impressed.

(I smiled. I'm happy that I did this.)

Chapter 13

(We finally arrived in Rome Italy. This city is
ridiculously beautiful. I'll be staying with
Anthony until I can afford my own place. He
insisted. He took me to a restaurant called
"La Matriciana" the dining room is elegant in
an old fashioned way.)

Anthony : I'll have the usual. Spaghetti alla
carbonara.per favore.

(Anthony said to the waiter. Why is he speaking Italian now?)

Waiter : Qualunque altra cosa?

Anthony : No grazie. voi Lunga?

Kwalunga : I don't understand a thing here Anthony.

(He laughed)

Anthony : Shit! I'm so sorry man. That was Italian. Don't worry. you will learn.

Kwalunga : Thanks but no thanks. I will stick to English.

(Again he laughed)

(The waiter came back and served us with a "Spaghetti alla carbonara" well it looked like a normal spaghetti to me and the taste wasn't that bad.)

Anthony : We need to get going. You need some rest.

Kwalunga : Are you sure that I'm not going to take your space.

Anthony : Of course not. I want you to stay with me. As soon as you are comfortable enough with the city then you can move out.

Kwalunga : Ok. Thank you Anthony.

Anthony : It's really nothing man.

(6 MONTHS LATER)

(I'm used to the city and Anthony has been a great friend and an amazing mentor. I started with small investigations and I must say I was made for this.)

(Today I'll be doing real work and I'm nervous but Excited. Zinzi calls me every day but she's been scarce lately and she is not taking my calls. I'm worried but maybe she is busy with something more important.)

Thomas : Now that you are officially a member of True Red this is your office.

Kwalunga : Am I going to be stuck in the office most days?

(He laughed)

Thomas : No. You will be going out like most of us but you do need the office.

Kwalunga : Yeah sure.

(I love my office. It's small but fancy)

(Anthony Tina and Godfrey stepped in. Tina is carrying a file.)

Tina : This is the case. Christina McDelufa was reported missing with other 3 girls.I suspect human trafficking. (She said opening the file)

Godfrey : Yep me too. Mrs McDelufa said her daughter went to celebrate her 18th birthday at Sundowners Club a month ago and she never came back home.

Kwalunga : Ok Ok

Tina : Jah. So I believe that something happened at that club.

Anthony : Today is the Poker game night and most people are going to be there including well known people.

Thomas : So what's the plan?

Godfrey : We are going there like anybody else but we are going there to do our job and see if we can find something useful.

Thomas : I like that.

Tina : Yeah

Kwalunga : So for how long are we going to be there?

Godfrey : As soon as everybody leaves we are also going to leave.

Kwalunga : And what if they start their mission after everybody left?

(Godfrey sighed)

Tina : What's your plan Lunga?

Kwalunga : We need to find something that will keep us there as long as possible.

Thomas : Lunga is right. If our target is going to be part of the poker game night he will be more careful and he will be watching every move so if everyone else leaves the club and we stay behind he will be suspicious.

Kwalunga : If it's a "he"

Tina : I doubt it's a "She"

Kwalunga : Lady and Gentlemen I said let's go there as Waiters. In that way we will have all the time we need to track every move of that bastard.

(Thomas clapped 3 times)

Thomas : You are a genius Lunga.

Godfrey : I judged you too soon Lunga.

(Godfrey smiled)

Anthony : Can I get my award now? This is all my brilliant mentorship (He laughed)

Tina: You did well Anthony.

Anthony : Grazie Signora (He smiled)

(Not Anthony with his Italian language. But I think that means Thank you or something. I don't care.)

Thomas : Tina are you still friends with that lady from Sundowners?

Tina : Not as closed as we used to be but we talk.

Thomas : Good. Tell her we are coming. Offer her money to keep her mouth shut.

Tina : On it.

Godfrey : Get us the uniforms Godfrey.

Tina : Black and White G (She walked out)

Thomas : Only Anthony

Sponsored

Lunga.

(Godfrey smiled)

Anthony : Can I get my award now? This is all my brilliant mentorship (He laughed)

Tina: You did well Anthony.

Anthony : Grazie Signora (He smiled)

(Not Anthony with his Italian language. But I think that means Thank you or something. I don't care.)

Thomas : Tina are you still friends with that lady from Sundowners?

Tina : Not as closed as we used to be but we talk.

Thomas : Good. Tell her we are coming. Offer her money to keep her mouth shut.

Tina : On it.

Godfrey : Get us the uniforms Godfrey.

Tina : Black and White G (She walked out)

Thomas : Only Anthony Lunga and I will be going to Sundowners. You and Tina will stay behind.

(Godfrey is a little bit disappointed but he will be fine.)

Godfrey : No problem.

Thomas : Good. Gentlemen we have a mission and we need to bring our A game. Lunga are you ready?

Kwalunga : Yeah sure.

Thomas : Excellent. Godfrey please ensure our uniforms are delivered before noon.
Anthony please order us something to eat I'm starving.

(They left my office and I had to try calling Zinzi once again.)

Chapter 14

(It's ringing)

Kwalunga : Zinzi!

Zinzi : Kwalunga.

(Her voice sounds different. She sounds drained and exhausted. I don't know but this is not the Zinzi I know.)

Kwalunga : Are you ok? I've been trying to get hold of you like forever. Where have you been?

Zinzi : I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : Zinzi what's going on?

Zinzi : Nothing.

Kwalunga : Then why were you not taking my calls?

Zinzi : I've been busy Kwalunga.

(What happened to "Lunga")

Kwalunga : Sunflower. I'm coming home at the end of this month

Zinzi : Really Babe?

Kwalunga : Yes my love

(Maybe I was just reading too much into this. Zinzi just missed me that much 6 months is a long time.)

Kwalunga : Yes. Baby let's get married when I come.

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : Zinzi please. My life is nothing without you here. I want us to get married so that you can move here with me.

Zinzi : To Italy?

Kwalunga : Yes Sunflower. My life is here now but without you it's pointless.

Zinzi : Kwalunga. You need to move on with your life and find somebody who will make you happy. You deserve that baby.

(She is crying. It's all in her voice)

Kwalunga : I'm not going to do that Zinzi. I'm coming back for you.

Zinzi : You need to learn how to leave without me because I.... (She paused)

(She is silent. Zinzi is worrying me now. Did she find somebody else?)

Kwalunga : Zinzi You found somebody else. Is that it? Is that the reason why you've been avoiding me all this time?

Zinzi : No baby. I don't need nobody else. All I ever wanted was you but my time with you is on the next life.

(Zinzi is really confusing me now.)

(Godfrey walked in)

Godfrey : The food is here. Please come.

Kwalunga : Thanks G.

(He walked out)

Kwalunga : Sunflower I'm sorry about that. I don't understand. Can we just get married please.

Zinzi : If you promise to speed up everything then I might see that day.

Kwalunga : I love you Zinzi and I'm not moving my life. I don't need nobody else.

(She softly laughed)

Zinzi : So there is no other woman there?

Kwalunga : No of course not.

Zinzi : You waited?

Kwalunga : I'm waiting for you.

(She took a deep sigh)

Zinzi : You are a man and you have needs.

(I know what she means but it seems like she has no idea what she means to me)

Kwalunga : Yes. I am a man. A man for you and a man who needs you. Only you.

Zinzi : I need to go. Please let me go.

Kwalunga : I also need to go. But before I do I need to know if you are willing to be my wife.

Zinzi : Yes baby.

(Yes!)

Kwalunga : Thank you. Thank you Sunflower. You just made my day.

Zinzi : I can't wait to plan for my big day.

Kwalunga : For our big day Sunflower.

Zinzi : I love you Kwalunga. With all of my heart and I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : You don't owe me that Sunflower.

Zinzi : I owe you more than that. I need to go. Bye my love

Kwalunga : Bye Sunflower.

(It's time to go and do some real work.
Sundowners here I come.)

Thomas : Lunga this is your earpiece. We will use these earpieces to communicate. Ok?

Kwalunga : Yeah sure.

(I put it on)

Thomas : Testing. Testing. Lunga
Sponsored

Anthony. Can you copy me?

(I'm silent but I can hear Thomas. Oh so this is how this thing works?)

Anthony : Copied

(Now they're all staring at me)

Kwalunga : Oh oh jah. Copied. (I shrugged)

(They laughed)

Kwalunga : Oh please guys give me a break.
I'm new to this.

Anthony : We feel you man. Don't worry (He laughed)

Thomas : I think we are good to go

Kwalunga : Yeah. But I don't feel comfortable in this suit. Can't I leave this bow tie at least?

Tina : No you can't. It's part of the uniform (She laughed)

(We are wearing black suits with white shirts and formal shoes. It feels like I'm dressed for my wedding day already.)

Thomas : We need to get going. We need to be at Sundowners before everyone else arrives.

Tina : Good. Lizzette is expecting you guys.

Kwalunga : Lizzette?

Tina : Sundowners owner.

Kwalunga : Oh

Tina : She is single Lunga and very beautiful
(She winked at me)

Kwalunga : Thank you but I have a wife
waiting for me back home.

Thomas : You are married?

Kwalunga : I'm getting married at the end of
this month.

Tina : Are you serious?

Kwalunga : Yes. It's about time.

Anthony : I'm for you man. Are we invited?

Thomas : Of course we are.

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : Krane is right. You guys are not just invited but you are my best men and Tina you can speak to my wife and see if she can squeeze you in. (I laughed)

Anthony : Are you serious?

(They seemed shocked)

Kwalunga : I am. This is the only family that I have (I said going through the file of the case that we are working on)

(There was silence)

Thomas : That really means a lot to us Lunga.(He smiled tapping my shoulder)

Kwalunga : Cool. Can we go now?

Anthony : Yeah sure. Everything seems in order. Let's go and get these bad guys

Tina : All the best guys.

Kwalunga : Thank you Tina.

(We walked out and I feel nervous all over again)

Chapter 15

(We arrive at Sundowners. It is a beautiful club and Lizzette is a middle aged woman and

she is damn hot. As soon as we arrived we went straight to her storeroom)

Lizzette : The people have arrived and it's time for you guys to start working

(She handed us trays and dishcloths)

Kwalunga : I don't know if I can do this.

Thomas : Lunga calm down. You can do this.

(I'm pacing the room)

Anthony : Thomas is right. You worked really hard to get here. Don't give up now.

Kwalunga : Ok ok ok. I can do this. Jah I can do this. (I breathe in and out countless times.)

|

Lizzette : Close your eyes and remind yourself why exactly are you doing this. Do it.

(I slowly closed my eyes and I saw Zinzi as a little girl begging her father to get off her. I remembered that Zinzi was raped and I remembered that there are women out there who are going through the very same thing at this very hour because some bastard forced them to it and I'm ready to get my hands to him/her and put them exactly where they belong. Behind bars.)

(I slowly opened my eyes. This was worth it)

Kwalunga : Let's go get these bastards.

(I said walking away and I heard applause)

(The club is packed already. I quickly fixed my earpiece. It's a small earpiece and it's quite hard to notice it.)

(Now Thomas is doing his own thing and Anthony is as well. One will swear that we don't know each other.)

Thomas : Lunga do you copy?

Kwalunga : Uh

Thomas : Good. Table 3 now.

(I sighed and walked straight to table 3 and there were 3 gentlemen and 3 ladies)

Kwalunga : Buona Giornata (Good day)

Lady : Ciao (Hi)

(I smiled)

Kwalunga : Vuoi qualcosa da bere? (Would you like something to drink?)

Lady : Jah. Tre Americanos e tre Peronis. Per favore (Yes 3 Americanos and 3 Peronis. Please)

Kwalunga : Nessun problema (No problem)

(I smiled and I left)

(Lizzette is the one serving us our orders. I found Anthony waiting for his order)

Anthony : Are you good? (He asked
Sponsored

Not even looking at me)

Kwalunga : Yeah I think so. What is
Americano and Peroni?

(He laughed and shook his head)

Anthony : Nothing for you to worry about
buddy.

Thomas : Guys focus!

(Sometimes I forget that I'm wearing this
stupid earpiece.)

(Anthony and I laughed)

(Lizzette gave me the drinks and I'm holding
a tray. I only took a few steps and the drinks
were on the floor. I'm not a waiter good
people and I don't know how they do this.)

Lizzette : Don't worry I got this.

(Now everyone is staring at us)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry about this Lizette. I don't know what happened.

Anthony : Sorry about that (He laughed)

(Really Anthony?? I'm going to take off this stupid earpiece.)

Thomas : He is going to pay for those (He laughed)

(I have the most irritating partners in the whole world.)

(Lizzette gave me another drinks and I was careful this time.)

(I reached the table and served my customers.)

Kwalunga : Il tuo ordine (Your order)

Gentleman : Grazie (Thank you)

Kwalunga : scusa ci ho messo tanto (Sorry I took long)

Lady : Nessun problema (No problem)

(She smiled. I smiled back and I left)

(The poker game began. It's just filthy rich men playing poker and nothing interesting. All these people seemed normal to me and then she walked in. She was wearing a pink dress . Her beauty lit up the room and all eyes were on her. She walked in. Scanned the room with

her eyes and walked straight towards men that were playing poker.)

Kwalunga : Uh! pinky pinky (I muttered)

(Before she even reached the table a man stood up and kissed her cheek. She was now on his thighs. Giggling)

Kwalunga : Copy Copy

Anthony : Sup?

Kwalunga : She just walked in.

Thomas : Who?

Kwalunga : Our Target

Anthony : You sure?

Kwalunga : Wait and see

(The night began. There were a couple of singers and they gave us a great performance. Everything seemed normal and maybe I was wrong about this woman but there's something that I can't shake off about her. It's the way she looks around.)

Thomas : I think you are wrong Lunga.

(I almost fainted. Sometimes I forgot I had this earpiece on.)

Anthony : How about Mr SpongeBob in the corner there. What is he up to?

(I quickly turned my face to that corner and I bursted into laughter. The guy really looked like Spongebob in his yellow shirt and his head? SpongeBob Spongebob.)

Thomas : Easy Lunga. You are drawing attention.

(He is right. I pulled myself together and went straight to table ten to take their order. Did you know that Italians eat their salads for dessert? Yeah Now you know.)

(I noticed that Pinky Pinky was now laughing with other girls. They seemed younger than her. Let me join them and see if I can get them anything)

(I noticed that Anthony wanted to beat me to it.)

Kwalunga : Anthony I got that. Please.

(He laughed)

Anthony : Copied.

(He went back and I went straight to the ladies.)

Buona serata. Le signore (Good evening ladies)

Lady : Ciao (Hi)

Kwalunga : Posso portarle qualcosa? (Can I get you anything?)

Lady : Pagherò tutto io (I will pay for everything)

(And that was pinky pinky offering to pay for everything. Now I'm suspicious)

Lady : IL tuo nome di nuovo? (Your name again?)

(She is referring to Ms pinky pinky. Oh so they are not friends? Interesting.)

Lady : Suzette

(Her name is "Suzette". So she says.)

Lady : Sei davvero simpatico Suzette. Grazie.
(You are really nice. Thank you)

Suzette : Nessun problema. (She said no problem then she brought her gaze back to me) Portami II tuo vino costoso (Bring me your expensive wine)

(I got confused for a moment. When am I going back to South Africa again?)

Kwalunga : Nessun problema.

(I left)

(I gave them "our" expensive wine and now my eyes are fixed on them)

(It caught my attention that Suzzete wasn't drinking but she was busy purchasing alcohol for these young girls)

(Time reads 02h03 am. Suzzette seems to be arguing with his boyfriend. He kisses her. Suzzete is pointing at the young girls)

Kwalunga : Copy copy

Thomas : Yeah

Kwalunga : Forget about Mr SpongeBob. The lady in pink is onto something.

Thomas : You sure

Kwalunga : Yep. Now I'm sure.

(Suzzette is walking out with the young girls)

Kwalunga : We got her. Let's move.

Thomas : Copied. Anthony! Anthony! Did you copy that?

Anthony : Sure. I'm going out first. Lunga after me.

Kwalunga : Got it.

Chapter 16

(Anthony walked out. Few minutes later I followed him and I found him inside our car)

Kwalunga : Where is our target?

Anthony : Don't worry they are still around.
How many were they?

Kwalunga : 2.... 3 including Suzzette

(Anthony frowned)

Anthony : Who the hell is Suzzette?

Kwalunga : The lady behind everything

Anthony : And how did you know her name?

Kwalunga : Not important. Where is Krane?

Anthony : He will stay be... (He paused)

Kwalunga : Caldo what's going on?

Anthony : They on the move. Let's follow them.

(The drive was long. Finally Suzzette and the girls stopped. This place is very quiet and scary too. We also parked a bit far from them and we switched off every light.)

(Now we are just sitting in silence and waiting for God knows what)

Kwalunga : Why are they not getting out of the car?

Anthony : I don't know bro but something is really not on there.

Kwalunga : Do you think I should go and check on them?

Anthony : No no. Don't.

(There is another car coming. It's a bigger car. Suzzette quickly got out of the car)

(She is speaking to the owner of a bigger car. The man looked around quickly and opened up a car door. He got in and immediately got out carrying a girl in his arms)

(My heart started racing)

Kwalunga : What do we do now?

Anthony : I need to call Thomas

(The man is now carrying another girl from the other car to his.)

Anthony : Thomas We need back up. Call the cops.

(Anthony squinted his eyes)

Anthony : I'm not sure about the location.
But we passed Navona Square (He paused)

Anthony : Yeah sure

Sponsored

I will send it to you. Lunga please send the
location to Thomas

Kwalunga : On it.

(I quickly sent the location to Thomas)

Anthony : Registration AB 027 BE Roma.
Sharp.

(Anthony hung up)

Anthony : Let's follow them.

(Suzette left her car there and got to the other one with the girls. Why would she do that?)

(We followed them. I think they realized that they were being followed and they started racing. Luckily Anthony was a starling behind the wheel. For a moment I thought we were going to die. 1 hour later there was a road block. Yes the cops were there. Anthony stopped the car and we watched the movie unfolds.)

(Suzette got out of the car with her hands raised in the air.)

Kwalunga : Let's go out.

Anthony : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : Yes (I said reaching the door handle)

(I was out and Anthony followed me)

Cop : What happened to these girls?

(Suzette is sobbing)

Suzette : We drugged them Ok?!!

(Anthony smiled. I'm not paying attention to anything else anymore except this guy who was staring at me. He is the same guy that was carrying girls from Suzette's car.)

Anthony : Our job here is done. Let's get out of here.

Kwalunga : Jah Jah.Let's get out of here.

(I'm finally going home to get married to the lover of my life. I've waited forever to see this day. I transferred the money to Zinzi to do all the wedding preparations. She made it clear that she wants a traditional wedding first so Anthony and others won't be coming with me for this one. Working at Red has been a great experience. I'm only going away for a few weeks but I know I'm going to miss my job.)

(Godfrey and Anthony are here. I'm still staying with Thomas but I'm ready to move out as soon as I come back with my wife.)

Godfrey : You are finally going home after 7 months. You must be happy.

Kwalunga : You have no idea.

Anthony : Don't forget to take pictures of your wedding.

Kwalunga : Seriously? Anthony

(We all laughed. Who forget about taking pictures of their wedding day?)

Godfrey : Now I will get to do some real work. I've been stuck forever in that office.

(He is right. Ever since I joined TRI Godfrey has been stuck in the office and I didn't like that at all. It feels like I took his place and that wasn't my intention. I want all of us to enjoy working at TRI.)

Kwalunga : I don't like what Thomas is doing. Excluding you on most cases is not on and I will speak to him as soon as I come back G.

Anthony : Yeah he has been very unfair lately.

Godfrey : I'll deal with it.

(There is silence)

Godfrey : Are you done packing?

Kwalunga : I think so... Wait I forgot to pack my wife's present.

(I bought her watch and an Italian diamond ring. Zinzi deserves the world.)

Godfrey : I'll pack it for you. Go and take a shower because you are really running out of time. Your flight will leave you.

(Anthony's phone rang and he went out to answer it.)

Kwalunga : Thank you G. Let me go and get ready.

(I can't wait to see Zinzi)

(We arrived at Rome Ciampino GB Airport. From here I will take a flight to Johannesburg and from Johannesburg to Durban. It's still a long journey)

Kwalunga : Guys thank you so much.

Anthony : Send my love to Zinzi

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : I will man and I will tell her th... (I paused)

(What are cops doing here?)

Cop : Gentlemen.

(This is confusing)

Kwalunga : Officers of the law how can we assist you?

Cop 2 : Apri la borsa (Open the bag)

Kwalunga : What? Perche? (Why?)

Godfrey : Lunga you have nothing to hide. Right?

Kwalunga : Yes of course.

Godfrey : Then let them do their job so that you can go.

Kwalunga : Yeah sure. They can go ahead.

(They started searching my luggage and they stopped and looked at each other)

Cop : E tuo? (Is this yours?)

(It's white powder)

Kwalunga : What is that?

(They laughed. Anthony covered his face with his hands and slowly sat down)

Cop 2 : queste sono droghe. Cocaina (These are drugs. Cocaine)

(I froze)

Kwalunga : No no there must be a mistake no!
Please

Cop 1 : tu sei sotto arresto (You are under
arrest)

Kwalunga : No wait. My wife.... My Wife is
waiting for me. Please

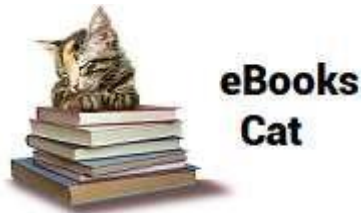
(It felt like a dream but this was a reality)

Kwalunga : Godfrey! Anthony! Please help me
please!

(The cops took me away and I was in
handcuffs. I was really under arrest for
something I don't know. In a foreign
country)

Daily New African Novels Download Here:

WWW.eBooksDuck.Com



Chapter 17

(I remember when I was 3 years old and my mother told me to close my eyes every time when something bad was happening. As soon as it was over she would count to 3 and tell me to open my eyes. You know what she said after that? She said. The past is over now

Sponsored

Lunga and the bad things are gone so smile my boy because all the bad things are gone.)

(I'm sitting in this holding cell with my eyes closed hoping that when I open them I'll be home with Zinzi in my arms but no I opened my eyes and I saw the very same man that I found here yesterday. He told me his name is Suffocate Das and that's all he said. He doesn't speak much)

Suffocate : Perche sei qui? (Why are you here?)

(I took a deep sigh)

Kwalunga : I'm here because I made a mistake by taking a job at True Red. I regret the day I helped them with their kidnapping investigation.

(He is staring at me)

Kwalunga : I remember that day like it was yesterday. They were working on a case about a missing ex wife and they believed it was her ex husband who kidnapped her but it turned out it was the ex husband's wife who kidnapped her. You know why? Because she believed that the ex wife might work things out with her husband and she feared rejection from her husband so she kidnapped the ex wife to keep her away from her husband. That's crazy. Right?

(He is just staring at me. Does he even understand anything that I'm saying or he wants me to speak Italian? He must forget it then. I'm not in the mood to speak their language. In fact I will speak isiZulu if he carries on like this.)

Suffocate : How old are you?

(After everything I have told him and he is only worried about my age?)

Kwalunga : I'm turning 23 in a few months

Suffocate : Di dove sei? (Where are you from)

Kwalunga : South Africa

(He shook his head)

Cop : Svegliatevi tutti!!!! (Everyone wake up!!)

(Why is he screaming? I just hope he is here to tell me that I'm going home)

Cop : Today we are transferring the two of you to Rebibbia Prison. il tuo tempo e scaduto (Your time here is up)

(I tightened my jaws and rubbed my palms together. I had that weird feeling in my stomach.)

Cop : Come! Come! (He shouted)

(I'm definitely going to die in that prison. Never in my life did ever I imagine that my life will turn out to be this bad. I always imagined myself in my grave but never in prison.)

(We arrived in Rebibbia prison and things were totally different from what i had in mind. Firstly they don't have prison uniforms. They wear their own clothes. There are about 6 of us in this cell. Someone was cooking at the table. I don't know if they cook in the toilet or if the toilet is in the kitchen but that was the situation.)

(I stepped in and I didn't know what to say. They were just staring at me.)

(I cleared my throat)

Kwalunga : Hi

(They are silent. Ok this English thing is not going to work here)

Kwalunga : Ciao (Hello)

(The guy that was cooking at the table slowly turned around and stared right at me. Holy shit! I can't believe this)

(He was the same guy who was working with Suzzete. The same guy that was carrying girls from Suzette's car and the same guy I got arrested.)

Guy : You finally made it my friend. I must say it took you long enough.

(How did he know I was coming here?)

Kwalunga : I'm not sure what you are talking about.

(He laughed)

Guy : You don't remember me? I'm offended.

Kwalunga : Who are you?

(I know exactly who he is but I don't know his name)

Guy : I'm the same guy that you worked really hard to ensure that he ends up here. In this dump place.

(He said looking around)

Kwalunga : No. You are confusing me with somebody else.

Guy : I'm Chelsea Cameron. Ring a bell?

(Chelsea Cameron now I know his name)

Chelsea : Still nothing? I will remind you. Non preoccuparti (Don't worry)

(My heart is racing. I swallow hard)

Chelsea : Guys this is my friend from South Africa. Kwalunga.

(The guys are silent. There is something about Chelsea. It's the way he said my name and the way he speaks English. He doesn't sound Italian)

Chelsea : I forgot to tell you that they don't understand English. But don't worry you won't get bored here. Food?

(I shook my head. What if he wants to poison me?)

Kwalunga : No I'm fine. Thanks.

(He laughed)

Chelsea : If you say so. (He shrugged)

(If I make it out of here alive. I promise you God that I will go to church every Sunday. To

my ancestors I promise to slaughter a big cow for all of you.)

(I remained seated on the floor until the evening. The guards came to check on us)

Chelsea : That was their final round. Let the fun begin.

(I frowned)

Kwalunga : Fun?

Chelsea : Yes Fun. Do you want to sing Nkosi sikelela for it?

(The other guys seemed scared now)

Kwalunga : No

Chelsea : That's bad. You have no idea how much I love the South African national anthem but it's fine. I will sing it myself.

(He smiles. This guy is crazy)

(He took a rope and looked up at the roof)

Chelsea : How are we going to do this Kwalunga?

(How am I supposed to know what he is on about?)

Kwalunga : I don't know.

(Am I in prison or this is some sort of a mental asylum? There is fear all around this cell now)

Chelsea : Me either but don't worry. I'll figure it out.

(Chelsea took a chair and climbed to it. He tied up a rope on the roof. He hung his head in the rope and smiled.)

(Is he committing suicide?)

Chapter 18

Chelsea : How do I look? Nice. Yeah?

Kwalunga : Chelsea what are you doing?

Chelsea : Give me a moment and you will find out.

(This guy is not stable. I swear to God)

Chelsea : Nkosi sikelela I Afrika
mayiphakhanyisi iphondo yakhe. Yizwa
imitandazo yethu (He sang)

(Fumbling our national anthem)

Chelsea : Do you have a bed Kwalunga?

(I'm silent. What the fuck is going on here?)

(He smiled)

Chelsea : You don't? I thought so too and
this why I'm fixing your bed for the night

(My breathing is faster and I can't control
it.)

Chelsea : This your pillow (He pointed at the
rope) it's not comfortable but it will have to
do.

Kwalunga : Chelsea look man I....

Chelsea : You what? You don't like it? (He cutted me before I finished)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry about the arrest. I was just doing my job. Nothing personal

Chelsea : Am I being personal right now?
Come to bed. (He smiled)

Kwalunga : No

(He laughed out loud)

Chelsea : No?

Kwalunga : Yeah. No

Chelsea : Pike. Boil me some water. Some coffee will do because it seems like we are going to have a very long night (He laughed)

(A guy stood up quickly and boiled water using a small kettle.)

(We sat in silence. Only the sound of boiling water)

Chelsea : My offer still stands Kwalunga

(I shook my head)

Chelsea : Ok. Would you like some coffee?

Kwalunga : Yes

Chelsea : Good. Take a seat and coffee will be served (He winked at me)

(I sat on a chair and rubbed my hands under the table. He came closer with a kettle on his hand)

Chelsea : Hands on the table

(Now his face is straight)

Chelsea : Now!!!! (He shouted)

(I slowly placed my hands on the table. He started pouring boiled water in my hands. I screamed)

Chelsea : I said hands on the table. You son of a bitch!!! (He shouted)

(Heavenly father please show me your mercy)

(I placed my shaking hands on the table and he poured boiling water. I closed my eyes as the pain got stronger and deeper. I groan)

Chelsea : Do you have an idea of how much you messed up my life? You clearly don't and I'm going to kill you (He said

Sponsored

emptying the kettle of boiling water in my hands)

Chelsea : Give me the acid Pike

(I couldn't care anymore. I just told myself that this was the night I'm finally meeting with my parents.)

Chapter 19

(I heard Pike's footsteps getting closer and I kept my eyes closed and fought back my tears. I could smell the acid. You know that sound when you are frying your eggs? Yeah that was the sound I heard coming from my hands and I couldn't feel my hands anymore. I didn't even wanna see what they looked like after that sound)

Chelsea : Get to that rope. Now!!

(I stood up and he helped me climb on a chair and he hung my head on a robe)

(He smiled)

Chelsea : Just the way I imagined you on that rope. You know what's going to happen now? You are going to spend the night there but I know you are not going to last that long. You

are going to fall asleep and then kick that chair.

(He laughed)

Chelsea : Then Voila! Dead.

Chelsea : Polvere alla Polvere (Dust to Dust)

(My breathing grew louder)

Chelsea : Cenere alla Cenere (Ashes to ashes)

Kwalunga : Dear God (I muttered)

(My hands are killing me. The pain is unbearable. I want to kick this chair right now but I thought of Zinzi. What If there is another chance for us? I can't give up now. not so easily.)

(I watched them getting to bed and I heard voices coming from the door. Chelsea got up quickly and signaled me to shut up.)

(I heard the sound of chains)

Guard: Entrare! Entrare! (Get inside! Get inside!)

(Someone got in. It was Suffocate Das. Where is he coming from? We got here together but I don't know what happened to him as soon as we got to this prison.)

(He looked at me and shook his head)

Kwalunga : Help me please (I whispered to him)

Suffocated : Free him. Now. (He is staring at Chelsea)

Chelsea : tu chi sei? (Who are you?)

Suffocate : Non vuoi saperlo (You don't want to know)

(Suffocate is a scary bad ass with his pierced nose and eyebrows. He helped me down from a chair)

Suffocate : What happened to your hands?

(I'm silent.I don't want to talk right now but I just wanna for pray for protection)

Sponsored

(I heard Pike's footsteps getting closer and I kept my eyes closed and fought back my tears. I could smell the acid. You know that sound when you are frying your eggs? Yeah that was the sound I heard coming from my hands and I couldn't feel my hands anymore. I didn't even wanna see what they looked like after that sound)

Chelsea : Get to that rope. Now!!

(I stood up and he helped me climb on a chair and he hung my head on a robe)

(He smiled)

Chelsea : Just the way I imagined you on that rope. You know what's going to happen now? You are going to spend the night there but I know you are not going to last that long. You

are going to fall asleep and then kick that chair.

(He laughed)

Chelsea : Then Voila! Dead.

Chelsea : Polvere alla Polvere (Dust to Dust)

(My breathing grew louder)

Chelsea : Cenere alla Cenere (Ashes to ashes)

Kwalunga : Dear God (I muttered)

(My hands are killing me. The pain is unbearable. I want to kick this chair right now but I thought of Zinzi. What If there is another chance for us? I can't give up now. not so easily.)

(I watched them getting to bed and I heard voices coming from the door. Chelsea got up quickly and signaled me to shut up.)

(I heard the sound of chains)

Guard: Entrare! Entrare! (Get inside! Get inside!)

(Someone got in. It was Suffocate Das. Where is he coming from? We got here together but I don't know what happened to him as soon as we got to this prison.)

(He looked at me and shook his head)

Kwalunga : Help me please (I whispered to him)

Suffocated : Free him. Now. (He is staring at Chelsea)

Chelsea : tu chi sei? (Who are you?)

Suffocate : Non vuoi saperlo (You don't want to know)

(Suffocate is a scary bad ass with his pierced nose and eyebrows. He helped me down from a chair)

Suffocate : What happened to your hands?

(I'm silent.I don't want to talk right now but I just wanna for pray for protection)

Chapter 20

(I've already spent 2 months inside this prison and I don't know what Thomas and Anthony did but all I know is I'm getting out this afternoon. My hands are messed up big time but inyama isahlangene no mphefumulo. I'm alive and that's all that matters. I haven't spoken to Zinzi for 2 months because I didn't know what I was going to say to her even if I called her and mostly importantly I didn't wanna break her heart. Her knowing that I was in a foreign prison was going to kill her.)

(I'm on the phone with Anthony)

Anthony : Tina and I will pick you up

Kwalunga : I want to know how I got here
Caldo.

(He Sigh)

Anthony : It was Godfrey. He planted drugs inside your luggage.

(I clenched my teeth)

Anthony : He is gone. Thomas fired him three weeks ago.

Kwalunga : Please come and get me out of here.

Anthony : I'll be there.

(I looked at my hands and my heart started racing.I felt something that I never felt before)

Kwalunga : And Anthony please get me a pair of black gloves

Anthony : For who?

Kwalunga : For myself (I hung up)

(I was supposed to be married to my Sunflower by now but no. Life had to challenge me once again. Life threw hardships on my way and I couldn't show my emotions. I endure the pain because I'm not just anybody else. I am Kwalunga Hlela "The Stoic".)

Suffocate : I'm glad that you are finally getting out. Questo posto non fa per te (This place is not for you)

Kwalunga : Thank you Suffo

Sponsored

Caldo.

(He Sigh)

Anthony : It was Godfrey. He planted drugs inside your luggage.

(I clenched my teeth)

Anthony : He is gone. Thomas fired him three weeks ago.

Kwalunga : Please come and get me out of here.

Anthony : I'll be there.

(I looked at my hands and my heart started racing.I felt something that I never felt before)

Kwalunga : And Anthony please get me a pair of black gloves

Anthony : For who?

Kwalunga : For myself (I hung up)

(I was supposed to be married to my Sunflower by now but no. Life had to challenge me once again. Life threw hardships on my way and I couldn't show my emotions. I endure the pain because I'm not just anybody else. I am Kwalunga Hlela "The Stoic".)

Suffocate : I'm glad that you are finally getting out. Questo posto non fa per te (This place is not for you)

Kwalunga : Thank you Suffo for everything.

Suffocate : Don't worry. It's nothing.

Kwalunga : It's everything.

Suffocate : So where to from here?

Kwalunga : I'm going back to South Africa.
I'm going back to my wife.

(He smiled)

Suffocate : Fammi un favore (Do me a favor)

Kwalunga : Anything.

Suffocate : Find my daughter. Per favore
(Please)

Kwalunga : Where do I start?

Suffocate : On the streets.

(I sigh)

Kwalunga : Ok. Ok fine.

(He took out a picture and handed it to me)

Suffocate : il suo nome e Sky. Sky Das. (Her name is Sky. Sky Das)

(She is a beautiful young woman)

Suffocate : She is only 19 years old. Please find her (He Sigh)

Suffocate : She is using.

Kwalunga : Drugs?

Suffocate : Yeah

(He stood up and started pacing the room. I felt his pain. He loves his daughter.)

Chapter 21

Suffocate : I tried my best to protect her but she kept going back. Her mother is dead I know and I didn't mean to kill her.

Kwalunga : What happened?

Suffocate : Lei mi ha tradito

(I do understand a bit of Italian but right now I'm lost.)

Kwalunga : I don't understand.

Suffocate : She betrayed me. She cheated on me!!!(He shouted)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry.

Suffocate : I'm sorry too. I'm sorry I couldn't control my anger. I wanted to scare her not to kill her.

Kwalunga : But you killed her and that's why you are here.

Suffocate : And I'm going to be here for a very long time. I will never see Sky again (He rubbed his face)

Suffocate : You have to take care of her. Can I trust you to do that for me?

(I hate making promises)

Kwalunga : I will try my best.

Suffocate : Thank you.

(He looked around and came closer to me)

Suffocate : When you go out there. Make sure that you find my house (He looked around once again) There is lots of money in that house.

(He whispered)

Kwalunga : Money?

Suffocate : Yes. Use that money to take care of my daughter. Do whatever you need to do to make sure she stays clean.

Kwalunga : Suffocate you failed to make sure that your daughter stays clean so how do you expect me to change that?

Suffocate : I was never home when she needed me because I was busy with other things.

(Something tells me that Suffocate is not here because she murdered his wife but there's more.)

Kwalunga : Why are you here?

(He Sigh)

Suffocate : Questo non e importante (That's not important)

Kwalunga : I see. Look Suffo

Sponsored

I have a life out there. I have priorities

Suffocate : And my daughter is not on the list of your priorities?

Kwalunga : That's not what I said. I will look for your daughter and I will ensure she is taken care of but I cannot promise you that I will watch her 24/7. I have a lot on my plate man.

Suffocate : I understand that but please promise me that you will try.

Kwalunga : But she will have to wait until I come back from South Africa.

Suffocate : Dammit!! When are you planning to come back to Italy?

Kwalunga : As soon as Zinzi and I are married.

Suffocate : Zi what?

Kwalunga : My wife to be. (I smiled)

(I miss her and I miss her so much)

(I finally got out of hell and I was looking forward to going home Kwa Maphumulo. I couldn't wait to see Zinzi.)

Anthony : Your hands are pretty badly messed up.

Kwalunga : I know.

Anthony : Lunga what happened?

Kwalunga : Anthony please. I don't want to talk about it.

Thomas : I want to know who did this to you.

Kwalunga : Chelsea Cameron.

(Their eyes are wide open)

Thomas : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : Thomas we got him arrested.
Remember?

Thomas : Yeah I get that but...No this doesn't make any sense.

Kwalunga : Well he knew a lot about me. He even knew about my arrest.

Anthony : Godfrey. This is all Godfrey that bastard is behind all of this.

Thomas : You are right Anthony.

Kwalunga : I don't care anymore. I need to call my wife and let her know that I'm coming. Please excuse me

(I said putting on my gloves. These gloves are going to be part of me for a lifetime now.)

(I went straight outside and I dialed Zinzi's number)

Kwalunga : Sunflower

Zinzi : Hi. Who is this?

(This is not Zinzi's voice. I checked the number again. But I dialed the right number so who is this?)

Kwalunga : No who are you?

(She hung up)

(What the heck is going on?. I dialed again and this time she didn't pick up.)

Tina : Is everything OK?

(Tina asked behind me)

Kwalunga : I don't know Tina. Something doesn't add up here

Tina : What do you mean?

Kwalunga : Someone just answered my wife's phone and when I asked her who she is? she hung up.

Tina : Try calling her again.

Kwalunga : I did but She is not picking up.

Tina I need to go home as in right now.

Tina : Yeah sure but your flight is for tomorrow

Kwalunga : I know Tina I know

(I'm going crazy right now. Why is Zinzi doing this to me?)

Chapter 22

(I'm finally inside the Uber to Kwa Maphumulo. I'm excited but yet nervous. I

will just drop my bags at home and go straight to see Zinzi)

(I got home and nobody was home. I don't care let me just go and see the lover of my life.)

(I arrived at Zinzi's home. There is a tent and people are busy outside. Are they having a ceremony or something? A young boy was sitting outside.)

Kwalunga : Ei! Ei! Come here

(He was just staring at me and looking all confused)

Boy : Mina?

Kwalunga : Yes you. Please come here

(He is slowly coming)

Kwalunga : Unjani boy?

Boy : Ngiyaphila (He is looking at the gloves that I'm wearing)

Kwalunga : Don't worry about these. Angisona isigebengu.

(He seemed relieved)

Kwalunga : Do you know Zinzi? A girl from here? (I pointed at the house)

Boy: Yes I do

Kwalunga : Good. Please go and tell her to come out. Uthi kusho u Lunga.

(The boy is looking at me confused)

Boy : But I can't do that?

Kwalunga : Please boy boy. Why not? Look if you do this for me then I promise to give you some money. (I smiled)

(He shook his head. Why is he being so difficult?)

Boy : I can't tell her that.

(I sigh)

Kwalunga : Why not? Please I'm begging you.

Boy : Because she is dead.

(I had that weird feeling in my stomach and I felt the world going upside down)

Kwalunga : What did you just say?

Boy : Sis Zinzi is dead. It's her funeral today. You see all those people are here for her funeral.

(No this boy doesn't know what he is talking about. I'm going in)

(I stepped inside the tent and a big picture of Zinzi welcomed me. The flowers. The coffin. My body was sweating. I took off my jacket)

Kwalunga : What's going on here?

(There is silence)

(A lady came towards me)

Lady : Lunga please calm down.

Kwalunga : No!!! (I shouted)

Lady : Please sit down

Kwalunga : No. Where is Zinzi? Zinzi! Zinzi!
Sunflower where are you? I'm here now.
Zinzi!

(I called out her name. Looking around the crowd of people.)

Zinzi's mom : My daughter is dead Kwalunga.
She is gone (She broke down)

(No

Sponsored

these people are crazy. Zinzi can't be dead.
She can't.)

Zinzi's uncle : Ngiyaxolisa Hlela.

Kwalunga : No! No! I want to see her. Open this bloody coffin. (I screamed)

Zinzi's uncle : I think he needs to see her for the last time.

Zinzi's mom : Do whatever needs to be done.

(Zinzi's uncle held my hand until we reached the coffin. They opened it up. I swallowed hard. My sunflower was laying there with her eyes closed forever. It was her. It was really Zinzi inside the coffin. My sunflower was dead.)

(For the first time in years I felt tears running down my face. I couldn't fight them back.)

Kwalunga : Mah what happened?

Zinzi's uncle : I will explain everything to you son but for now sekumele siyomubeka endlini yakhe yokugcina.

(Where did I go wrong? What is my purpose in this world? They say bad things come and go but what about me? Why can't bad things go away from me? Where is this God when I need him the most?)

(I watched her coffin slowly going down to the grave. We were supposed to be planning our wedding not me planning how to live without her)

Pastor : Babusisiwe abafela enkosini.

Therefore we commit her body to the ground

it's her final resting place. Earth to earth Ashes to Ashes Dust to Dust. In the hope of resurrection unto eternal life the promise of our Father Jesus Christ. We faithfully and victoriously give her over to your blessed care. Amen.

(When the Pastor mentioned Dust to Dust and Ashes to Ashes it took me back to that prison. Back to Chelsea. Why didn't he just kill me?. The pain is eating me up slowly inside but it refuses to surrender to death)

Zinzi's uncle : You need to throw soil on the coffin Hlela.

(My mother told me that throwing soil on the coffin symbolizes the deceased's return to earth as a final place of rest but to me it feels like this is a way of saying my final

goodbye and accepting that Zinzi is dead. I can't do it.)

Kwalunga : No

Zinzi's uncle : Ok. Do you want to go back inside the house?

Kwalunga : I want to know what happened to her.

Zinzi's uncle : Ok. Come with me

(I followed him to the house and everything just feels like a terrible dream that I'm fighting so hard to wake up from.)

(We sat down)

Zinzi's uncle : Hlela I'm really sorry.

Kwalunga : What happened?

(He Sigh)

Zinzi's uncle : Zinzi was sick for a long time. She suffered from stomach cancer.

(I froze)

Kwalunga : What?

Zinzi's uncle : Yes. 2 months after you were gone to Italy she started falling sick all over again and she was in and out of hospitals.

(Tears were streaming down my face. I finally had a taste of my own tears as they reached my mouth.)

Kwalunga : I didn't get a chance to tell her how much I love her. I didn't get a chance to

tell how much I missed her because nobody told me she was dying.

(Zinzi's uncle was wiping away his own tears)

Zinzi's uncle : Her mother wanted to call you and let you know but Zinzi asked her not to. She gave us false hope and she wanted us to believe that she wasn't dying. She couldn't stop talking about her wedding even on her last days.

(Maybe if I came here a bit earlier I would have saved Zinzi. Maybe if I didn't get arrested Zinzi and I would have been married.)

Zinzi's uncle : She wrote a letter for you.

Kwalunga : A letter?

(He nodded)

Zinzi's uncle : Her mother will give it to you.
She promised Zinzi that she would give it to
you.

(Death ends a life not a relationship and
Zinzi will never be dead to me.)

Chapter 23

Zinzi's mom : She waited for you.

(Zinzi's mother said walking in)

Kwalunga : Mah I know but I was in...(I
paused. I can't talk anymore)

Zinzi's mother : She asked about you everyday. She hoped that you would come back but you didn't.

Kwalunga : I wanted to come back but I couldn't.

Zinzi's mom : Why not? Didn't you say that you love my daughter?

(I exhaled)

Kwalunga : Mah I was arrested in Italy

Zinzi's uncle : What?

(He is shocked)

Kwalunga : Yes malume. I was supposed to come back two months ago but I got arrested.

Zinzi's mom : Maybe if you came a bit ea...

Kwalunga : I know Mah (I cutted her)

(There is silence)

Kwalunga : I'm going out for revenge. It's time.

Zinzi's uncle : Hlela wait.

(I'm out)

(I walked out and dial Thomas's number on my way home.)

Kwalunga : Thomas. Find Godfrey.

Thomas : Are you ok?

Kwalunga : My wife is dead.

Thomas : What? What happened?

Kwalunga : Find Godfrey and make sure he stays in Italy until I arrive.

Thomas : He killed your wife?

Kwalunga : No but I want him dead.

(There is silence)

Kwalunga : Find that bastard. (I hung up)

(I arrived home and Sthembele was arguing with his father. I walked in and there was silence)

Sthembele : Lunga what happened to you?
Ufike nini?

Kwalunga : Today. Zinzi is dead. My wife passed away Sthe.

Manqoba : Everything you touch turns to disaster. You are like a magnet for bad luck.

(My body was boiling. Now this is anger)

Kwalunga : Who the fuck do you think you are Manqoba?

(I hear gulps)

Kwalunga : Answer me dammit!!!! (I shouted)

Sthembele : Lunga hhaibo.

Kwalunga : Shut up Sthe!!

Manqoba : What happened to you mfana ka Mzwandile? You go to Italy for a few months and you come back here and speak to me like that? Disrespect me?

Kwalunga : Disrespect? Disrespect? Are you seriously going to tell me about disrespect? (I screamed)

(maNcwane walked in)

maNcwane : Kwenzekani la?

Kwalunga : Why don't you ask your husband? Huh?

(I don't know what's going on with me but I'm losing.)

Manqoba : Useyahlanya u Kwalunga.

Kwalunga : Do you want to see how crazy I am?

(I asked. walking closer to him. He is scared)

Sthembele : Kwalunga No.

(I pinned him against the wall and stared right at him.)

maNcwane : Sthembele go and call Mthunzi!!!

Kwalunga : Sthembele sit down and watch me kill your father!!! (I yelled)

(I tightened my hand around Manqoba's neck. I remembered how he treated my parents and I pressed more)

(Mthunzi ran inside and grabbed me from Manqoba)

Mthunzi : Lunga what do you think you are doing?

Kwalunga : You shut the fuck up Mthunzi before I do something I will regret.

(Mangoba is on the floor gasping)

Kwalunga : I want all you motherfuckers to listen to me and listen to me very carefully. I will not tolerate your nonsense any more. I watched all of you disrespect my parents. I grew up watching all of you abusing my mother but I won't allow anybody to abuse me anymore and I mean nobody. Do you understand me?

(I stared right at them one by one)

Kwalunga : Where is Basithembile. Manqoba?
Where is your daughter?

maNcwane : Kwalunga since when do you call
your fathers by name?

(I laughed and it was fake)

Kwalunga : Are you seriously asking me that?

maNcwane : What happened to you
Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : What happened to your daughter
when she used to call my father by name?
What happened to your daughter when she
insulted my mother? What happened to your
daughter when she called my mother a
witch?

(Silence)

Kwalunga : Anisakwazi ukukhuluma manje?
Seniyimungulu? Huh?

Mthunzi : Kwalunga get out!! (He shouted.)

Kwalunga : And go where Mthunzi?

(Mthunzi hissed)

Kwalunga : This is my home. Isn't it?

Basithembile : No it isn't.

(She said in)

Kwalunga : Wena fakof!!! (I shouted)

maNcwane : I always knew ukuthi lengane
akuyona eka Mzwandile. Look at his behavior.

(My heart beat grew rapidly)

Kwalunga : What did you just say?

maNcwane : It's the truth. You are not Hlela.
Mthunzi Mangoba? mtsheleni iqiniso.

(I looked at Mthunzi then at Mangoba. They
are silent)

Kwalunga : Is she telling the truth? Am I not
a Hlela?

Mthunzi : maNcwane stop!!! (He shouted)

maNcwane : Vele iqiniso. All Mzwandile's
children died. Hluliwe had four miscarriages
and Mzwandile wanted to leave her so your
mother went to sleep with another man and
you were conceived.

(No! No! She is lying)

Kwalunga : How do you know that I'm not Mzwandile's son?

maNcwane : Because Mzwandile went to isangoma and isangoma confirmed that u Mzwandile can't have kids with your mother. Your mother was there during the consultation and she knew Mzwandile was going to leave her so she slept with another man and she lied about you being Mzwandile's son.

Kwalunga : Nooooooooo!!!!!!! (I yelled)

Mthunzi : maNcwane how dare you?

(I started hitting the wall with my fist until my hand couldn't take the pain anymore)

(Mangoba walked out.)

Mthunzi : Lunga stop!! Uwu Hlela wena. You have always been one and you will forever be one. maNcwane is lying.

(What if she is not? Then who am I?.I don't know what to believe anymore. I can't take listen to this No!)

Chapter 24

(Four days later I took a flight back to Rome. I needed to be away from home and the lies. When I arrived in Italy I knew very well that I was coming for everything that was taken from me.)

Kwalunga : Where is Godfrey?

Thomas : You need to tell me everything first.

Kwalunga : There is nothing to tell you. My wife died from cancer and I arrived at her funeral. You know what I think? If Godfrey didn't frame me then I wasn't gonna be in jail. I would have arrived home in time to save Zinzi.

(He is silent. Anthony walked in)

Kwalunga : Anthony where is Godfrey?

Anthony : Lunga I'm sorry about what happened.

Kwalunga : Where the fuck is Godfrey Zulu?

Thomas : Lunga you are scaring me. What happened to you? You changed.

Kwalunga : That's what happens when you've been angry for too long. Anthony I want Godfrey now.

Anthony : He is around but he moved in with Cameron.

Kwalunga : Chelsea Cameron?

Anthony : Yeah.

Kwalunga : He is back from prison?

Thomas : Yep. right after you got out.

Kwalunga : Fantastic.

(They looked at each other)

Thomas : Lunga you need to calm down.

Kwalunga : I've been calm from the day I was born and look where it got me.

Anthony : What if you get arrested?

Kwalunga : That will be way better because I will be arrested for something I know this time.

(My phone rang. Unregistered number)

Kwalunga : Talk to me.

Person online : You sound different. Is that Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : Yeah who wants to know?

Person online : Suffocate Das. Are you back?

(Shit. I forgot about his daughter)

Kwalunga : Suffo. Are you good?

Suffocate : Been better. How is my daughter?

Kwalunga : I only arrived today.

Suffocate : How is your wife?

Kwalunga : She died.

Suffocate : Che cosa? (What?)

Kwalunga : She is gone. I will look for your daughter but I need to take care of something first.

Suffocate : No take your time. I'll see what else I can do.

Kwalunga : Ok man.

(He hung up)

Kwalunga : I need Chelsea's address.

Thomas : Yeah sure.

Anthony : Lunga you know? If I were you I would do the same thing.

Thomas : Yep me too

Kwalunga : So you guys understand?

Anthony : I do. Do whatever it takes to get closure.

(I sigh)

Kwalunga : Thank you.

Thomas : Do you need our help?

Kwalunga : No. I will handle this one myself.

(Our desk phone rang)

Thomas : TRI. How can I help you?

(He is silent)

Thomas : Mam please calm down.

Anthony : What's going on?

(Thomas shook his head)

Thomas : Did you call the police?

(Thomas ran his fingers through his hair)

Thomas : What's her name?

(He grabbed a pen and wrote something down)

Thomas : I will see what I can do. Thank you
bye.

Anthony : What's going on?

Thomas : Anthony please call Tina. A girl by
the name of Sky Das has been kidnapped.

(There could only be one Sky Das.
Suffocate's daughter.)

Kwalunga : Sky Das?

Thomas : Yes. Someone took her last night.
The cops were called but nothing so far.

Kwalunga : I know her... I mean I know her
father.

Thomas : Really?

Kwalunga : Suffocate Das. He is at Rebibbia
Prison. I left him there.

Anthony : Isn't he the one who called you
minutes ago?

Kwalunga : It was him.

Thomas : Fuck! Who took her daughter?

Kwalunga : Chelsea Cameron.

Thomas : Why?

Kwalunga : He knows something. Suffocate is the one who saved me from Chelsea.

Anthony : They didn't get along after that?

Kwalunga : Of course not.

(Thomas rushed to his computer)

Thomas : Cops will take care of this one. I will just provide them with all the information.

Anthony : What if the cops take longer?

Thomas : They won't. Sky Das. She is a beautiful young woman

(Thomas said looking at his computer)

Kwalunga : I know and his father asked me to look after her. She is a druggie.

Thomas : For real?

Kwalunga : That's what he said. Her mother is no more and she lives in the streets now.

Thomas : But the lady who called me now said she is her mother. Selina Das.

(Now I'm confused)

Kwalunga : But Suffocate told me that she killed her.

Thomas : Are you sure that he was talking about this Sky Das?

(I walked closer to the computer and it was her.)

Kwalunga : It's her. I don't understand what's going on here.

(Tina walked in)

Tina : Sky Das has been reported missing. Her mother is willing to pay if we find her daughter.

(This case is dragging everything now. What if Chelsea is really behind this. I don't want him arrested this time but I want him dead.)

Tina : Lunga how are you? I'm sorry about your wife.

Kwalunga : It's ok.

(I'm tired of people asking how I'm doing. I walked to my office and started doing my own research on this Chelsea Cameron)

(When I arrived at TRI Thomas gave me a gun but I never used it. I'm not the person I used to be. I don't even know who I am anymore. A lot has changed in a short space of time.)

(I arrived at Chelsea's house and it was open. I walked in and I found a man who was reading a magazine. Sitting with his legs crossed over the table. He quickly reached for his gun and pointed at me)

Guy : Dov'e il Chelsea? (Where is Chelsea?)

Kwalunga : Non lo so (I don't know) I'm here for him too.

(He is looking at me from top to bottom. I'm wearing a plumber uniform with my tool box and my black gloves on)

Guy : You are not a plumber. Who are you?

Kwalunga : No. Who are you?

Guy : I'm here for Sky Das. Suffocate sent me.

(My phone rang. it's Thomas.)

Kwalunga : Krane

Thomas : What are you doing at Cameron's house?

(Fuck! He tracked me down using my number.)

Kwalunga : I'm here for the girl.

Thomas : The girl is at Navona. We are working on it. Please leave that house Kalunga because it's not safe for you.

(I hung up. Thomas has no idea what I'm going through)

Kwalunga : Sky is at Navona. Find her.

Guy : What about you?

Kwalunga : I'm here for plumbing.

(I said walking upstairs)

(I went to Chelsea's study room. It's a fancy one. I opened my tool box and took out my ropes and my kettle. I tied the ropes up on the roof and I sat down on his chair. I waited.)

(I waited and 2 hours later I heard Godfrey's voice. They are arguing.)

Godfrey : I told you that we must keep her here Chelsea.

(Are they not worried about finding a door open? Do they even realize that there is someone else in this house? They are getting closer to the door.)

Chelsea : I can't go back to Prison G. I can't!!!! (He shouted)

(My blood boiled hearing Chelsea's voice.
I remembered what he did to me. I slowly
reached for my gun and cocked it. I swung
the chair back to them)

Kwalunga : You won't

(They froze)

Kwalunga : Benvenuti signori (Welcome
Gentlemen)

Godfrey : What the fuck are you doing
here?

Kwalunga : Not so fast Zulu.

(I stood up and locked the door)

Chelsea : What do you want?

Kwalunga : To sing Nkosi sikelela for you

(I smiled)

(Chelsea opened his first drawer)

Kwalunga : Are you looking for this?

(I showed his gun in my hand)

Chelsea : G

Sponsored

where is yours? Shoot this bastard.

Godfrey : In the car (he rubbed his neck)

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : I always knew he is dumb. On the rope now! (I'm pointing two guns at them)

(They looked at each other)

Kwalunga : I have all the time in the world.
Coffee? Anyone?

Chelsea : If you dare touch me I will ensure
that I kill your wife. I have eyes
everywhere.

(I tightened my jaws. Did he just mention my
wife?)

Kwalunga : On the rope. Now!!!! (I yelled)

Godfrey : Ey fakof!! (He yelled back at me)

(Bang! I shot his leg. He screamed)

Kwalunga : You don't get it. Do you? On the
rope!!!

(They both climbed on their chairs. Godfrey is struggling)

Kwalunga : Help him.

(Chelsea held his arm and helped him up. Their heads are hanging on the ropes. I took out the letter from Zinzi and handed it to Godfrey)

Kwalunga : Read it. Loud.

(He gulped)

Godfrey : To my darling husband. If you are reading this letter then it means you didn't make it on time. I waited my love. I waited for 6 months hoping that you would come back in time but I couldn't wait any longer because the pain was too much. Kunginqobile

ukufa sthandwa sami and I'm so sorry. All I ever wanted was to die in your arms but we will meet again in the next life. Please find happiness because you deserve it.

Your Sunflower Zinzi.

(Silence)

Kwalunga : You can't get to my wife Cameron because you know what happened? Your friend planted drugs inside my bag and I was arrested. When I got to prison You Cameron tortured me (I paused and fixed my gloves) You see these gloves? They are now part of my life. You know what happened when I finally got out of prison? I arrived home and it was my wife's funeral. My Sunflower was dead.

(I looked up at them and switched on the kettle)

Kwalunga : Now give me one good reason why I shouldn't kill the both of you.

Godfrey : Lunga look man I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : So I shouldn't kill you because you are sorry?

(Silence)

Kwalunga : Chelsea uyakhumbula edanyani? Do you remember how you used to make my coffee?

Chelsea : Vaffanculo!!! (Fuck off)

Kwalunga : Right. Right (I smiled)

Kwalunga : Take off your shoes. Both of you.

(They are just looking at me. Bang!! I shot Chelsea's leg. He groaned. He is a real devil)

Kwalunga : Morena boloka setjhaba sa heso O fedise dintwa le matshwenyego O se boloke Ntate... (I sang)

Kwalunga : Uyakhumbula edanyani Chelsea? You forgot that part and it's my favorite part of our National anthem. (I laughed)

(They were busy taking off their formal shoes and they weren't wearing socks)

Kwalunga : You guys don't wear socks? Disgusting!

(I took my kettle and made my way to them. I started pouring boiling water on Chelsea's

feet. He screamed and kicked the chair. I went to Godfrey and he kicked the chair before I even started pouring in his feet)

(I sat down and watched them fighting for their lives. I watched until they took their last breath.)

Kwalunga : Polvere alla Polvere (Dust to Dust)
Cenere alla Cenere (Ashes to Ashes)

(I said as I Took my toolbox and walked away . When I stepped out of the door I saw Anthony and Thomas walking up the stairs carrying their guns.)

Chapter 25

Thomas : Lunga!!

Kwalunga : It's done.

Anthony : Where are they?

Kwalunga : Dead.

(I walked down the stairs and out to Thomas's car. They followed me)

Thomas : How did you get here?

Kwalunga : I took a cab. Any news on Sky?

Anthony : She was found.

(I sigh)

Anthony : Thomas drive.

(After killing Godfrey and Chelsea I felt different but lighter. The anger was gone.)

(Thomas took a route that I don't know. I'm confused. What are they planning?)

Thomas : Where are you going?

(He is silent)

(Are they planning to kill me?)

Anthony : Don't worry we are almost there.
(He smiled)

(We arrived at the gate and it automatically opened. We drove in. The house is very far from the gate. We got out of the car and walked up a small hill)

Anthony : We are here. (He smiled)

Kwalunga : What are we doing here?

(I looked around the house and it's stunning.
It's a Glass wall house)

Kwalunga : This house is breathtaking.

Thomas : I know and it's all yours.

Kwalunga : What?

(I'm shocked)

Anthony : Yep. We wanted to surprise you
with your w...(He paused)

Kwalunga : With Zinzi. Jesus I don't know
what to say. Guys how did yo... I
I mean what did I do to deserve this?

(I walked in and I'm stunned)

Tina : Surprise!!!

(Tina came out of nowhere with balloons. I hugged her)

Thomas : There is more.

Kwalunga : Guys no.

Anthony : Yes there is more. You need a car

(He threw me the keys)

Tina : It's inside your garage. (She smiled)

Kwalunga : No I can't take this. It's too much. No.

Tina : This is what we do with all of us. We did the same thing with Anthony and Godfrey.

Anthony : It's Red's tradition (He laughed)

Kwalunga : The car? Can I see it?

Tina : Of course. Come with me

(We followed her to the garage. The garage slides open)

Thomas : There is your baby.

(2006 Ferrari F430 Spider Black. I broke down this is too much.)

(Zinzi would look so beautiful in my Ferrari)

Tina : Ahh! Lunga drive.

(After killing Godfrey and Chelsea I felt different but lighter. The anger was gone.)

(Thomas took a route that I don't know. I'm confused. What are they planning?)

Thomas : Where are you going?

(He is silent)

(Are they planning to kill me?)

Anthony : Don't worry we are almost there.
(He smiled)

(We arrived at the gate and it automatically opened. We drove in. The house is very far from the gate. We got out of the car and walked up a small hill)

Anthony : We are here. (He smiled)

Kwalunga : What are we doing here?

(I looked around the house and it's stunning.
It's a Glass wall house)

Kwalunga : This house is breathtaking.

Thomas : I know and it's all yours.

Kwalunga : What?

(I'm shocked)

Anthony : Yep. We wanted to surprise you
with your w...(He paused)

Kwalunga : With Zinzi. Jesus I don't know
what to say. Guys how did yo... I
I mean what did I do to deserve this?

(I walked in and I'm stunned)

Tina : Surprise!!!

(Tina came out of nowhere with balloons. I hugged her)

Thomas : There is more.

Kwalunga : Guys no.

Anthony : Yes there is more. You need a car

(He threw me the keys)

Tina : It's inside your garage. (She smiled)

Kwalunga : No I can't take this. It's too much. No.

Tina : This is what we do with all of us. We did the same thing with Anthony and Godfrey.

Anthony : It's Red's tradition (He laughed)

Kwalunga : The car? Can I see it?

Tina : Of course. Come with me

(We followed her to the garage. The garage slides open)

Thomas : There is your baby.

(2006 Ferrari F430 Spider Black. I broke down this is too much.)

(Zinzi would look so beautiful in my Ferrari)

Tina : Ahh! Lunga come on. Come here

(They hugged me. Family isn't about the blood you share but it's about who is willing to bleed for you. Red is my family.)

Kwalunga : Can I take it for a spin?

(Thomas looked at Anthony)

Anthony : Look Lunga after what you did today I think you should stay low a bit.

Thomas : Anthony is right. After what you did you can't just continue with your life like everything is normal.

Anthony : I know that right now you need to be surrounded by people who care about you but you can't stay in my house after what happened today. It's not safe. At least nobody knows you are here.

(Tina is confused. I am too)

Tina : Wait. What are you guys on about?
Lunga what ar.....

(I raised one finger. Stopping Tina)

Kwalunga : Tina please hold on a sec. Are you guys serious? You brought me here for me to hide from the world?

Thomas : No Lunga No. Of course not. We just want to protect you. Lunga You kil... (He paused and looked at Tina) You know what you did Lunga and you are going to be stuck in this house until we are sure that you are safe.

Kwalunga : So I'm suspended from work?

Thomas : No.You are on leave .

(I sigh)

Kwalunga : Ok fine. Thank you.

Anthony : Everything is going to be fine.

Kwalunga : May I please check out my house at least?

Thomas : That you can do(He laughed)

Anthony : And please take a shower first and take off that plumber uniform. We have guests coming (He laughed)

Tina : I brought your clothes but you can thank me later. (She laughed)

(We all laughed)

(We walked in and I took a tour around my house. It's beautiful. Fully furnished.

Thomas's girlfriend arrived with her friends and 1 hour later Tina's boyfriend and Anthony's girlfriend walked in. We ate and drank.)

(The noise was too much for me and I needed some time with myself so I went to my room and it was peaceful. My clothes are packed inside my closet. Zinzi's picture was framed and placed in my bed)

(I smiled and I knew Tina was behind this)

Is that your wife?

(a woman's voice asked behind me. It's one of the "friends")

Kwalunga : Oh Hi

Her : Lunga right?

Kwalunga : The one and only

Her : Meloni Washington. Tina's friend.

Kwalunga : Melo (I muttered)

(She laughed and hugged me)

Meloni : You smell nice (She smiles)

(I don't know if it's alcohol but this woman is beautiful)

Kwalunga : Thank you

Meloni : So are we that bad?

Kwalunga : Meaning?

Meloni : You left us downstairs to be stuck here all alone (She laughed)

Kwalunga : Eish. No it's not like that. I just needed some peace of mind.

Meloni : I understand. I'm sorry about your wife.

(I sighed)

Kwalunga : Thank you.

Meloni : She was a beautiful woman.

(She took Zinzi's picture and looked at it)

Kwalunga : She was.

Meloni : You miss her?

Kwalunga : Everyday.

Meloni : Tell me more about her.

Kwalunga : She was a sunflower.

(She smiled)

Meloni : I heard that in South Africa you have the big five

Kwalunga : So I've heard.

Meloni : You've never seen them?

(I shrugged)

Kwalunga : No

(She laughed)

Kwalunga : It's not funny Melo.

Meloni : Trust me it is (She laughed)

(I'm turned on. I blame the alcohol)

(I'm staring at her and she cleared her throat)

Kwalunga : You are beautiful. You know that?

Meloni : So I've heard (She smiled)

(I pulled her by her waist and The Smell of Americano was all over my face. I sucked her lower lip and she welcomed me. She want this as much as I do. I continued kissing her as we make our way to the door. I locked the door and pressed her against the door. She

moaned in my mouth. We fed each other air leaving no room. She wrapped her leg around my waist. My hardness met her pussy. I groaned in her mouth. She used her hand taking off her underwear. It was on the floor. She unbuttoned my jeans. I felt everything I was wearing reaching my ankles. I was naked. I pulled her leg and wrapped it around my waist and I did the same thing with her other leg. My dick met her wetness and I slipped in. I'm not the only one who has entered this territory but it will have to do. I pushed harder and she screamed.)

Kwalunga : Come on baby girl Sssssh (I whispered in her ear while I continued pushing deeper)

(She is holding onto me for her dear life. Her body is shaking.)

Kwalunga : Don't cum now.

Meloni : No baby I can't hold it back

(I moved faster)

Kwalunga : Not so fast.

Meloni : Oh God! (She rested her head on my shoulder)

Kwalunga : We are not done here.

(She softly laughed)

(I placed her down and took my sneakers and rolled down my pants)

Kwalunga : Come with me baby girl

(I pulled her by her arm and we were in my bed. I entered her from her the back. And I pushed in inch by inch. My hand is in her shoulder. I moved. I groaned and grabbed her by her hair)

Meloni : Cum with me baby.

Kwalunga : Fuck! (I muttered)

(I collapsed on her back.)

Meloni : Shit that was amazing.

Kwalunga : Uh!

(For me it was just sex nothing more than that.I pulled out)

Kwalunga : Dammit!!!

(She turned her face back to me quickly)

Meloni : What?

Kwalunga : Are you on a pill?

Meloni : Shit! Condom. Yes don't worry about it and I'm clean Lunga.

(I faked a smile and walked to my bathroom.)

Meloni : Can I join you baby?

Kwalunga : Nah.

(What the fuck have I done? There has been a couple of woman before Zinzi and after I dated Zinzi but that was before she visited me for the first at uMlazi and told me about the rape. I feel like I've betrayed her now. I

finished taking a shower and walked out.
Meloni is not in my room. I don't care)

(I dressed up and she walked in)

Meloni : I used your shower in the guest room.

(I continued dressing. I felt her lips at the back of my neck. She is breathing in my ear. My dick is getting harder. She ran her hand on my back down to my aroused dick)

Kwalunga : No. we need to go downstairs. The guys are waiting.

Meloni : Come on baby. Don't let me beg now.

Kwalunga : You don't have to.

(I put on my sneakers and head out)

Kwalunga : I'll be downstairs.

Chapter 26

(Guilt is fucking with me. I reached downstairs and everyone was staring at me.)

Kwalunga : What?

(Tina laughed)

Anthony : Where is Mel?

Kwalunga : Coming.

(They all laughed. What's so funny?)

Tina : Coming.. Wooh I like that (She winked at me)

Kwalunga : Oh fuck you Tina.

(We all laughed. I sat down on a couch and Meloni walked downstairs)

Thomas : There you are. You look (He paused)

Tina : Drained is the word you looking for Tommy.

(They laughed and Meloni rolled her eyes)

Nicola : What were you guys doing for so long?

(Nicola is Anthony's girlfriend)

Meloni : Adults things

(I clenched my teeth)

Thomas : Wow I never thought I'd see the day.

(They laughed)

(Meloni sat on my thighs and wrapped her arm around my neck. She is catching feelings and I don't like it.I faked a smile)

Anthony : You are a man Lunga. I give it to you (He raised his glass)

Thomas : My sweetheart and I need to get going.

Mia : Adults things are waiting for us (She laughed)

(Mia is Thomas's girlfriend)

Kwalunga : Jeez guys come on.

Agatino : Adults things are good. Right babe?
(He kissed Tina's neck)

(And Agatino is Tina's boyfriend)

Kwalunga : Let me walk you guys out and
Thank you for all this.

Agatino : And for some Fucks too. say it
Lunga. (He laughed)

(Agatino is a crazy ass hole)

Kwalunga : For that too Agatino.

(We all laughed. Meloni is all over me and it's irritating)

Agatino : Babe we also need to get going now. It's getting late.

Tina : It is. Lunga we need to go. Are you guys going to be fine?

(You guys? What does that mean?)

Meloni : Yes. Where is Aida and Gianna?

(She asked looking around)

Thomas : You only realizing now that they are not here?

Nicola : Only a good dick is capable of doing that to a person (She laughed)

(They all laughed. What the heck?)

Agatino : They left ages ago. Gianna had to run somewhere.

Meloni : Ok. Bye guys.

Tina : Bye

Kwalunga : Are you not joining them.

Meloni : No. Thanks.

(Kwalunga what have you gotten yourself into?)

Kwalunga : Oh.

(Everyone has left. Now it's only Meloni and I and It's awkward)

Meloni : How about round two right here?

Kwalunga : No thanks.

(She rolled her eyes)

Meloni : Lunga please. You don't want all this?

(She is touching herself. I took her bag and showed her out)

Kwalunga : What happened between us was a mistake. Please leave.

Meloni : You little son of b....

Kwalunga : Don't say it sweetheart (I cutted her before she finished)

Meloni : I hate you.

(She roughly grabbed her bag from me and walked out.)

Kwalunga : Bye.

(I sigh in relief)

(THE NEXT DAY AT TRUE RED INVESTIGATORS)

Kwalunga : Thomas come on man. I need some action.

Thomas : Didn't you get enough of that last night? (He winked at me)

Kwalunga : Ah! come on bruh.

Anthony : How was it?

Kwalunga : Not mind blowing.

(They laughed)

Thomas : Sorry man.

Kwalunga : Guys I need my job back. I'm done being stuck in that office. (I stood up and pushed back the chair)

Thomas : Actually we are working on something. We are doing some investigation on Selina Das.

Kwalunga : Why?

Anthony : Because Suffocate asked us to do it .

Kwalunga : Suffocate Das?

Thomas : Alessio Suffocate Das

Anthony : He is a real defender. (He laughed)

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

(Thomas rolled his eyes)

Anthony : In Italian Alessio means a defender but you know what? Forget about it.

Kwalunga : We learn everyday. So what is all this investigation about?

Thomas : He wants to know if his wife is alive or not.

Kwalunga : That's all?

Anthony : It's not an easy one Lunga.

Kwalunga : I'll handle this one with my eyes closed.

(They laughed)

Thomas : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : Yes. Give me a few days.

Anthony : Your birthday is in 3 days. Isn't?

Kwalunga : Yes.

Thomas : How old are you?

Anthony : It's safe to say he is 24.

Thomas : You look older than that.

Kwalunga : I know. I've been told that so many times.

(We laughed)

Thomas : So what's your plan?

Kwalunga : I will find Sky and she will sing. I know.

Thomas : Gosh! I mean for your birthday man.

Kwalunga : Oh that. No plan.

Anthony : I'll make one for you.

Kwalunga : I know you will. Thomas I need more info about this case.

Thomas : Yeah sure. Here.

(He gave me a file and I went through it)

Kwalunga : This is one boring case.

Anthony : It's pseudocide Lunga.

Kwalunga : Jah! Jah!. I need to get going.

Thomas : Keep us posted.

Kwalunga : Will do.

(I took my car keys and walked out with the file.)

(I've been an alcoholic lately. It's hard going to bed sober with Zinzi's death and the drama that I left back home. It's too much. I stopped by at the nearest bar for a cold one)

(I'm sitting in the corner. It's a peaceful place)

Can I join you?

(A woman's voice asked. Can a man have a drink in peace around here?)

Kwalunga : Yeah sure. (I said not looking at her)

Her : You do know that we can get out of here and I can give you the night that you will remember for the rest of your life?

(I laughed and shook my head)

Kwalunga : No thanks. I'm fine here.

Her : I want you.

(Why does that give me a erection? Now I want to see this woman. I slowly lift up my face. She is beautiful but the make up is heavy)

Kwalunga : You do?

Her : Yes but you will have to pay.

Kwalunga : Uyahlanya wena.

Her : Excuse me?

Kwalunga : No I mean why would you expect me to pay for something you want?

Her : My name is Star

(I looked at her. No I know this person. This is Sky Das.)

Kwalunga : Star? I see.

Star : And you are?

Kwalunga : If you are Star then I am Morgan.

Star : Morgan. Nice to meet you. May I?

(She pointed at the chair)

Kwalunga : Please.

Star : Buy me a drink.

(She is tough and I love it)

Kwalunga : Sure. (I signaled for a waiter)

Star : I'll have a martini extra dirty (She bit her lip)

Waiter : Nessun problema (No problem)

(It's the way she looks at me that makes me hard. Her order arrived)

Star : Why are you drinking alone?

Kwalunga : But I'm not alone now.

Star : Yes. Non piu (Not anymore)

(She sucked her straw in a dangerous way and stare at me)

Kwalunga : Do that one more time and I swear I will fuck you right here on this table.

(She laughed. That's it)

Kwalunga : Let's go.

Star : You got money?

Kwalunga : Money is not a problem

Star : I like that.

(We drove to my house. I shouldn't be doing this but who the fuck cares?)

Star : Bellissimo (Beautiful)

(She said looking around my house)

Kwalunga : My bedroom is more beautiful.
Wanna check it out?

Star : Yeah.

(She took off her coat and she was only wearing a lingerie underneath. I knew she is a druggie but this?)

Kwalunga : Nice (I muttered)

Star : Come here

(I walked closer to her. She undressed me. She started working her magic with her tongue. She was on her knees. Toying with my dick. I groaned. The warmth of her mouth met my dick and it sent shivers all over my body. I groaned. this is too much. She sucked me harder. I look down she is staring right at me. I'm going to burst and I can't allow that. I pulled her up with her arm)

Kwalunga : Come here.

(I picked her up in my arms and placed her in bed. I undressed her and she was tense)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart?

Star : Yeah

Kwalunga : Breath

Star : I have stretch marks

(That doesn't sound like Star.)

Kwalunga : And you are beautiful.

(She smiled)

(I wrapped my arm around her neck and kissed her. She smells like mint. I inhaled and kissed her down to her neck. My mouth surrounded her nipple and I sucked in. She

moaned. I brushed my hand to her thighs down to her pussy. I ran my fingers through her wetness. She moaned a bit louder and her head fell back. I kissed her down to her belly and before I knew it I was in her pussy. I lifted her legs placing each on my shoulders. I ran my tongue around her clit)

Star : Morgan (She murmured)

(Oh now I remember that I'm Morgan)

(I worked my tongue around her clit and her toes curled)

Star : Shit!

Kwalunga : What's wrong? (I smiled)

Star : I want you. I want your dick.

Kwalunga : Say please.

Start : Morgan don't do that to me.

(I played with my dick around her pussy. She moaned)

Kwalunga : Say please.

Star : Morgan please (She whispered)

(I grabbed a condom)

Kwalunga : Wanna do the honors?

Star : Please.

(I gave her a condom and I slept on my back. Her warm hands reached my dick. Before I knew it she was on top. Her warm pussy

welcomed my dick. Damn! She is tight. She moved)

Kwalunga : Ah fuck!

(Her pussy milked my dick. This is mind blowing. I rolled her under me and I was on top. I grinded her pussy.)

Star : Harder Morgan.

(With pleasure sweetheart. I went deeper. quickening the pace)

Star : I'm so close.

(I thrusting harder)

Star : Oh God (She screamed. touching her breast)

(The orgasm overpowered me. I went deeper and deeper. I need to catch my breath. I snapped the condom and threw it on the floor)

Kwalunga : Fuck. That was good

(We are both gasping for air)

Star : That was out of this world.

(She wrapped her arms around me)

Kwalunga : Are you feeling cold?

Star : Aha!

(I took a duvet and we covered our bodies. Her leg wrapped around me and her head on my chest. I kissed the top of her head and wrapped my arm around her.)

(Wait why am I doing this? She is a prostitute for goodness sake)

Star : Morgan

Kwalunga : Yeah

Star : I don't want to go.

(Why am I nervous?)

Kwalunga : Please don't go.

(She held me tighter and kissed my cheek. I smiled. It just for one night so let me enjoy it.)

(We slept and I woke in the middle of the night and she wasn't in bed. I froze)

Kwalunga : Star! (I shouted)

(Silence)

Kwalunga : Fuck! Star where are you?

Star : I'm here. I went to the bathroom

(I ran to her and hugged her tighter)

Kwalunga : Don't do that anymore. You scared me. Jesus!

(She laughed)

Star : I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : Come to bed.

(She followed me to bed)

Kwalunga : Now I want you (I whispered in her ear)

Star : Fuck me.

Kwalunga : I don't want to fuck you this time but I want to make love to you.

(She smiled. What am I saying?)

Kwalunga : I mean yeah I want to fuck you

(She seemed disappointed)

(I was right. I didn't fuck her this time but I made love to her. She is different)

(I woke up the next morning and I made her breakfast. I wanted to take it to bed but she was already walking downstairs. Wearing only my shirt. I got hard)

(I cleared my throat)

Kwalunga : I wanted to surprise you.

Star : I'm surprised.

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : I need to get to work. Have some breakfast so we can go.

(This is really Sky Das and she is more beautiful without make up.)

Star : When am I going to see you again?

Kwalunga : Anytime. I need to transfer your money. Thanks for last night.

Star : Don't pay me.

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

Star : Yes (She smiled)

Kwalunga : No. This is your job. I'll pay.

Star : Please don't. I insist.

Kwalunga : Ok.

(She smiled and my heart beat went faster.
Only Zinzi made me this nervous)

Star : Tell me more about you Morgan.

Kwalunga : Why are you doing this?

Star : What?

Kwalunga : This. Selling your body.

Star : Wow. You know what? I need to go

Kwalunga : Please don't go. I'm sorry.

Star : I don't want to do this Morgan. I'm not proud of myself but I'd rather be a prostitute than let my father take care of me with the money he got from killing people.

(I'm not shocked at all.)

Kwalunga : Where is your father?

Star : He is right where he belong. Prigione
(Prison)

Kwalunga : And your mother?

(She swallowed)

Star : She is h.. I mean dead (She stutters)

(I am right. This is Suffocate's daughter.
Sky Das not Star)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry about that.

Star : It's ok. You need to go to work. Where
are you working?

Kwalunga : At a restaurant in Navona Square.
(I lied)

Star : Nice. (She smiled)

(I walked to her and lifted up her chin. Our
lips locked. I ran my hand down to her butts.
I laughed)

Kwalunga : No panties. Good girl.

(She laughed)

(I pulled her by her arm and she was pressed against the table. I'm kissing the back of her neck.)

Kwalunga : Dammit!

Star : What wrong?

Kwalunga : Condom. Upstairs.

Star : Damn!

(I ran upstairs and grabbed a condom then I walked back. She was on a couch touching her pussy and her breasts. she is naked. Holy shit! This woman will be the death of me)

Kwalunga : Jesus! (I muttered)

Star : Come and fuck me (She whispered)

(This Italian woman is something else)

(I tore the condom wrapper. This is Fuckntastic)

(Guilt is fucking with me. I reached downstairs and everyone was staring at me.)

Kwalunga : What?

(Tina laughed)

Anthony : Where is Mel?

Kwalunga : Coming.

(They all laughed. What's so funny?)

Tina : Coming.. Wooh I like that (She winked at me)

Kwalunga : Oh fuck you Tina.

(We all laughed. I sat down on a couch and Meloni walked downstairs)

Thomas : There you are. You look (He paused)

Tina : Drained is the word you looking for Tommy.

(They laughed and Meloni rolled her eyes)

Nicola : What were you guys doing for so long?

(Nicola is Anthony's girlfriend)

Meloni : Adults things

(I clenched my teeth)

Thomas : Wow I never thought I'd see the day.

(They laughed)

(Meloni sat on my thighs and wrapped her arm around my neck. She is catching feelings and I don't like it.I faked a smile)

Anthony : You are a man Lunga. I give it to you (He raised his glass)

Thomas : My sweetheart and I need to get going.

Mia : Adults things are waiting for us (She laughed)

(Mia is Thomas's girlfriend)

Kwalunga : Jeez guys come on.

Agatino : Adults things are good. Right babe?
(He kissed Tina's neck)

(And Agatino is Tina's boyfriend)

Kwalunga : Let me walk you guys out and
Thank you for all this.

Agatino : And for some Fucks too. say it
Lunga. (He laughed)

(Agatino is a crazy ass hole)

Kwalunga : For that too Agatino.

(We all laughed. Meloni is all over me and it's irritating)

Agatino : Babe we also need to get going now. It's getting late.

Tina : It is. Lunga we need to go. Are you guys going to be fine?

(You guys? What does that mean?)

Meloni : Yes. Where is Aida and Gianna?

(She asked looking around)

Thomas : You only realizing now that they are not here?

Nicola : Only a good dick is capable of doing that to a person (She laughed)

(They all laughed. What the heck?)

Agatino : They left ages ago. Gianna had to run somewhere.

Meloni : Ok. Bye guys.

Tina : Bye

Kwalunga : Are you not joining them.

Meloni : No. Thanks.

(Kwalunga what have you gotten yourself into?)

Kwalunga : Oh.

(Everyone has left. Now it's only Meloni and I and It's awkward)

Meloni : How about round two right here?

Kwalunga : No thanks.

(She rolled her eyes)

Meloni : Lunga please. You don't want all this?

(She is touching herself. I took her bag and showed her out)

Kwalunga : What happened between us was a mistake. Please leave.

Meloni : You little son of b....

Kwalunga : Don't say it sweetheart (I cutted her before she finished)

Meloni : I hate you.

(She roughly grabbed her bag from me and walked out.)

Kwalunga : Bye.

(I sigh in relief)

(THE NEXT DAY AT TRUE RED INVESTIGATORS)

Kwalunga : Thomas come on man. I need some action.

Thomas : Didn't you get enough of that last night? (He winked at me)

Kwalunga : Ah! come on bruh.

Anthony : How was it?

Kwalunga : Not mind blowing.

(They laughed)

Thomas : Sorry man.

Kwalunga : Guys I need my job back. I'm done being stuck in that office. (I stood up and pushed back the chair)

Thomas : Actually we are working on something. We are doing some investigation on Selina Das.

Kwalunga : Why?

Anthony : Because Suffocate asked us to do it .

Kwalunga : Suffocate Das?

Thomas : Alessio Suffocate Das

Anthony : He is a real defender. (He laughed)

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

(Thomas rolled his eyes)

Anthony : In Italian Alessio means a defender but you know what? Forget about it.

Kwalunga : We learn everyday. So what is all this investigation about?

Thomas : He wants to know if his wife is alive or not.

Kwalunga : That's all?

Anthony : It's not an easy one Lunga.

Kwalunga : I'll handle this one with my eyes closed.

(They laughed)

Thomas : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : Yes. Give me a few days.

Anthony : Your birthday is in 3 days. Isn't?

Kwalunga : Yes.

Thomas : How old are you?

Anthony : It's safe to say he is 24.

Thomas : You look older than that.

Kwalunga : I know. I've been told that so many times.

(We laughed)

Thomas : So what's your plan?

Kwalunga : I will find Sky and she will sing. I know.

Thomas : Gosh! I mean for your birthday man.

Kwalunga : Oh that. No plan.

Anthony : I'll make one for you.

Kwalunga : I know you will. Thomas I need more info about this case.

Thomas : Yeah sure. Here.

(He gave me a file and I went through it)

Kwalunga : This is one boring case.

Anthony : It's pseudocide Lunga.

Kwalunga : Jah! Jah!. I need to get going.

Thomas : Keep us posted.

Kwalunga : Will do.

(I took my car keys and walked out with the file.)

(I've been an alcoholic lately. It's hard going to bed sober with Zinzi's death and the drama that I left back home. It's too much.I

stopped by at the nearest bar for a cold one)

(I'm sitting in the corner. It's a peaceful place)

Can I join you?

(A woman's voice asked. Can a man have a drink in peace around here?)

Kwalunga : Yeah sure. (I said not looking at her)

Her : You do know that we can get out of here and I can give you the night that you will remember for the rest of your life?

(I laughed and shook my head)

Kwalunga : No thanks. I'm fine here.

Her : I want you.

(Why does that give me a erection? Now I want to see this woman. I slowly lift up my face. She is beautiful but the make up is heavy)

Kwalunga : You do?

Her : Yes but you will have to pay.

Kwalunga : Uyahlanya wena.

Her : Excuse me?

Kwalunga : No I mean why would you expect me to pay for something you want?

Her : My name is Star

(I looked at her. No I know this person. This is Sky Das.)

Kwalunga : Star? I see.

Star : And you are?

Kwalunga : If you are Star then I am Morgan.

Star : Morgan. Nice to meet you. May I?

(She pointed at the chair)

Kwalunga : Please.

Star : Buy me a drink.

(She is tough and I love it)

Kwalunga : Sure. (I signaled for a waiter)

Star : I'll have a martini extra dirty (She bit her lip)

Waiter : Nessun problema (No problem)

(It's the way she looks at me that makes me hard. Her order arrived)

Star : Why are you drinking alone?

Kwalunga : But I'm not alone now.

Star : Yes. Non piu (Not anymore)

(She sucked her straw in a dangerous way and stare at me)

Kwalunga : Do that one more time and I swear I will fuck you right here on this table.

(She laughed. That's it)

Kwalunga : Let's go.

Star : You got money?

Kwalunga : Money is not a problem

Star : I like that.

(We drove to my house. I shouldn't be doing this but who the fuck cares?)

Star : Bellissimo (Beautiful)

(She said looking around my house)

Kwalunga : My bedroom is more beautiful.

Wanna check it out?

Star : Yeah.

(She took off her coat and she was only wearing a lingerie underneath. I knew she is a druggie but this?)

Kwalunga : Nice (I muttered)

Star : Come here

(I walked closer to her. She undressed me. She started working her magic with her tongue. She was on her knees. Toying with my dick. I groaned. The warmth of her mouth met my dick and it sent shivers all over my body. I groaned. this is too much. She sucked me harder. I look down she is staring right at me. I'm going to burst and I can't allow that. I pulled her up with her arm)

Kwalunga : Come here.

(I picked her up in my arms and placed her in bed. I undressed her and she was tense)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart?

Star : Yeah

Kwalunga : Breath

Star : I have stretch marks

(That doesn't sound like Star.)

Kwalunga : And you are beautiful.

(She smiled)

(I wrapped my arm around her neck and kissed her. She smells like mint. I inhaled and kissed her down to her neck. My mouth

surrounded her nipple and I sucked in. She moaned. I brushed my hand to her thighs down to her pussy. I ran my fingers through her wetness. She moaned a bit louder and her head fell back. I kissed her down to her belly and before I knew it I was in her pussy. I lifted her legs placing each on my shoulders. I ran my tongue around her clit)

Star : Morgan (She murmured)

(Oh now I remember that I'm Morgan)

(I worked my tongue around her clit and her toes curled)

Star : Shit!

Kwalunga : What's wrong? (I smiled)

Star : I want you. I want your dick.

Kwalunga : Say please.

Start : Morgan don't do that to me.

(I played with my dick around her pussy. She moaned)

Kwalunga : Say please.

Star : Morgan please (She whispered)

(I grabbed a condom)

Kwalunga : Wanna do the honors?

Star : Please.

(I gave her a condom and I slept on my back. Her warm hands reached my dick. Before I knew it she was on top. Her warm pussy

welcomed my dick. Damn! She is tight. She moved)

Kwalunga : Ah fuck!

(Her pussy milked my dick. This is mind blowing. I rolled her under me and I was on top. I grinded her pussy.)

Star : Harder Morgan.

(With pleasure sweetheart. I went deeper. quickening the pace)

Star : I'm so close.

(I thrusting harder)

Star : Oh God (She screamed. touching her breast)

(The orgasm overpowered me. I went deeper and deeper. I need to catch my breath. I snapped the condom and threw it on the floor)

Kwalunga : Fuck. That was good

(We are both gasping for air)

Star : That was out of this world.

(She wrapped her arms around me)

Kwalunga : Are you feeling cold?

Star : Aha!

(I took a duvet and we covered our bodies. Her leg wrapped around me and her head on my chest. I kissed the top of her head and wrapped my arm around her.)

(Wait why am I doing this? She is a prostitute for goodness sake)

Star : Morgan

Kwalunga : Yeah

Star : I don't want to go.

(Why am I nervous?)

Kwalunga : Please don't go.

(She held me tighter and kissed my cheek. I smiled. It just for one night so let me enjoy it.)

(We slept and I woke in the middle of the night and she wasn't in bed. I froze)

Kwalunga : Star! (I shouted)

(Silence)

Kwalunga : Fuck! Star where are you?

Star : I'm here. I went to the bathroom

(I ran to her and hugged her tighter)

Kwalunga : Don't do that anymore. You scared me. Jesus!

(She laughed)

Star : I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : Come to bed.

(She followed me to bed)

Kwalunga : Now I want you (I whispered in her ear)

Star : Fuck me.

Kwalunga : I don't want to fuck you this time but I want to make love to you.

(She smiled. What am I saying?)

Kwalunga : I mean yeah I want to fuck you

(She seemed disappointed)

(I was right. I didn't fuck her this time but I made love to her. She is different)

(I woke up the next morning and I made her breakfast. I wanted to take it to bed but she was already walking downstairs. Wearing only my shirt. I got hard)

(I cleared my throat)

Kwalunga : I wanted to surprise you.

Star : I'm surprised.

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : I need to get to work. Have some breakfast so we can go.

(This is really Sky Das and she is more beautiful without make up.)

Star : When am I going to see you again?

Kwalunga : Anytime. I need to transfer your money. Thanks for last night.

Star : Don't pay me.

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

Star : Yes (She smiled)

Kwalunga : No. This is your job. I'll pay.

Star : Please don't. I insist.

Kwalunga : Ok.

(She smiled and my heart beat went faster.
Only Zinzi made me this nervous)

Star : Tell me more about you Morgan.

Kwalunga : Why are you doing this?

Star : What?

Kwalunga : This. Selling your body.

Star : Wow. You know what? I need to go

Kwalunga : Please don't go. I'm sorry.

Star : I don't want to do this Morgan. I'm not proud of myself but I'd rather be a prostitute than let my father take care of me with the money he got from killing people.

(I'm not shocked at all.)

Kwalunga : Where is your father?

Star : He is right where he belong. Prigione
(Prison)

Kwalunga : And your mother?

(She swallowed)

Star : She is h.. I mean dead (She stutters)

(I am right. This is Suffocate's daughter.
Sky Das not Star)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry about that.

Star : It's ok. You need to go to work. Where
are you working?

Kwalunga : At a restaurant in Navona Square.
(I lied)

Star : Nice. (She smiled)

(I walked to her and lifted up her chin. Our
lips locked. I ran my hand down to her butts.
I laughed)

Kwalunga : No panties. Good girl.

(She laughed)

(I pulled her by her arm and she was pressed against the table. I'm kissing the back of her neck.)

Kwalunga : Dammit!

Star : What wrong?

Kwalunga : Condom. Upstairs.

Star : Damn!

(I ran upstairs and grabbed a condom then I walked back. She was on a couch touching her pussy and her breasts. she is naked. Holy shit! This woman will be the death of me)

Kwalunga : Jesus! (I muttered)

Star : Come and fuck me (She whispered)

(This Italian woman is something else)

(I tore the condom wrapper. This is Fuckntastic)

Chapter 27

(3 days later)

(It's my birthday today and I woke up feeling down. I miss my parents and I miss Zinzi. I looked at her photo one more time before I walked out. I need to get to work and I'm already late)

(I walked in at True Red)

Tina : Surprise!!! Happy birthday Lunga.

(There is a small cake and snacks at the reception)

Kwalunga : Ah! Guys you didn't have to. really.

Anthony : It's part of our tradition (He laughed)

Thomas : Later we are going out. Cancel all your plans.

Kwalunga : I don't have any.

Anthony : Good.

Tina : Cut the cake.

Kwalunga : Thank you Reds

(They laughed)

Thomas : Is that who we are now?

Tina : Yes "Reds" and I love it.

Anthony : Same here.

(I cutted the cake and we ate. I'm not a fan of sweet things)

Kwalunga : And where is the beer? (I laughed)

Anthony : Don't worry you can have that later.

(Thomas and Tina laughed)

Thomas : How is the Investigation going?

Anthony : Yeah man. Alessio needs answers.

Kwalunga : It's going pretty good actually.

Thomas : Yeah?

Kwalunga : I found Star.

Star? (They asked in unison)

Kwalunga : Yes Star. That's what she calls herself. (I smiled. I actually miss her)

Tina : Really?

Kwalunga : Yep and I am Morgan (I laughed)

Thomas : Lunga you are something else. I'm proud of myself for letting you join the team.

Tina : He is good. I give him that.

Kwalunga : She is a prostitute.

Thomas : What?

Kwalunga : Exactly that. She told me that his father is in prison where he belongs.

Tina : This is exciting.

Anthony : Did you fuck her? I mean did you buy?

Thomas : Anthony come on. Lunga would never do that.

(I'm silent)

Tina : Lunga No you didn't.

Kwalunga : I actually did and it was mind blowing.

(Tina and Anthony laughed)

Thomas : No. I don't like that.

Kwalunga : I had to Thomas. It was all part of the investigation. I got her to talk.

Thomas : Jesus! Lunga you are a bad boy bruh.

Kwalunga : I know that.

(We laughed)

Thomas : Did she mention anything about her mother?

Kwalunga : Not what I wanted to hear but she will sing. Soon.

Thomas : What if you don't get to see her again?

Kwalunga : I will see her again Thomas. Don't sweat it.

Anthony : You really fucked her and she asked for more.

Kwalunga : She will come back for more. Call Suffocate and tell him we are close.

Thomas : I'll give him a call.

Tina : Didn't you scare her off with those gloves?

Kwalunga : She kissed these gloves baby girl
(I laughed)

(They laughed)

Tina : I have a meeting with Mr Iran. I need to get going.

Anthony : Don't let him fuck you Tina.

(We laughed. Anthony is crazy)

Tina : It will depend. (She popped out her tongue)

Kwalunga : On what? Agatino will kill you.

Tina : I'm kidding (She laughed) I don't fuck my clients. Thank you very much.

(She walked to her office)

Thomas : Don't forget about our date tonight Tina.

Tina : Yeah Yeah.

Kwalunga : Date?

Thomas : Whatever it is that we are doing later.

(Anthony and I laughed)

Kwalunga : Guys Thank you but we have loads of work to do.

Anthony : Yeah right. I need to do some follow up on some stupid case.

Thomas : Remember the magic words Anthony.

Anthony : I love my job and I can do it. Yeah yeah (He rolled his eyes)

Kwalunga : Those are magic words?

Thomas : Yeah. Try them later.

(He walked to his office)

Anthony : Thomas thinks we are kids.

(We laughed)

Thomas : I heard that Anthony. (He shouted while walking into his office)

Kwalunga : You are in trouble (I laughed)

Anthony : And I'm scared (He shook his hands and laughed)

(I did say this guy is crazy)

(Later that day)

(We ate at a restaurant then later we went to The Basement - Pub. The vibe was good.)

(Mia is here now.)

Mia : Please excuse me. I need a bathroom.

Thomas : You ok baby?

(Tina rolled her eyes)

Mia : I'm fine babe. I'll be back in a minute.

(She walked away)

Tina : What the fuck is she doing here
Thomas?

Thomas : You know Mia..She..She(He
stuttered)

Anthony : Mia is Insecure that's all.

Tina : This was supposed to be about Lunga.
About us Reds.

Thomas : I'm sorry guys.

(Why is Tina getting all so worked up. I think
she has a thing for Thomas.)

Kwalunga : It's ok Thomas. She is your girlfriend.

Tina : I might as well just call Agatino.

Thomas : Tina please don't.

(Anthony poked me under the table. I want to laugh because I know he thinks exactly what I think)

Tina : Then do something about this Mia.

(I cleared my throat and Anthony coughed)

Tina : What's wrong with you two?

Anthony : I think it's the flu.

(Star walked in and she looked beautiful as ever. I swallowed hard and my stomach turned.)

Kwalunga : Oh fuck (I murmured)

(She went straight to the table that was surrounded by men. I clenched my teeth)

Mia : Babe I'm not feeling well.

(Oh Mia is back)

Thomas : What's wrong?

Mia : I don't know baby.

Tina : Maybe you should go home.

(Thomas shook his head)

(I'm no longer paying attention to them. My eyes are glued on Star. She is laughing with those bastards and I'm jealous)

Anthony : You ok Lunga?

(Star walked towards the counter. I stood up)

Kwalunga : I'll be back now. I need a beer.

Anthony : But you a have beer.

Kwalunga : Another one Anthony.

(I walked away. Star was waiting for her order. I stood behind her)

Kwalunga : I don't like what you are doing (I whispered in her ear)

(She laughed)

Star : This is my job Morgan and you can't tell me what to do and what's not to do. You don't own me.

(She is not even looking at me. How did she know that it's me?)

Kwalunga : Ok.

(I went back to my seat and ordered a vodka. I need to lose myself because Star is driving me nuts.)

Thomas : You good?

Kwalunga : Yeah

Anthony : Let's get another round ladies and gentlemen.

(A woman joined us and sat on my lap)

Her : Hey bad boy

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : I'm not a bad boy sweetheart.

Her : Those gloves make you one and bad boys make me wet (She whispered)

(I laughed)

Star : Excuse Miss thang

(Star? When did she get here?)

(Thomas and Anthony are shocked)

Kwalunga : Star baby.

Tina : Maybe you should go home.

(Thomas shook his head)

(I'm no longer paying attention to them. My eyes are glued on Star. She is laughing with those bastards and I'm jealous)

Anthony : You ok Lunga?

(Star walked towards the counter. I stood up)

Kwalunga : I'll be back now. I need a beer.

Anthony : But you a have beer.

Kwalunga : Another one Anthony.

(I walked away. Star was waiting for her order. I stood behind her)

Kwalunga : I don't like what you are doing (I whispered in her ear)

(She laughed)

Star : This is my job Morgan and you can't tell me what to do and what's not to do. You don't own me.

(She is not even looking at me. How did she know that it's me?)

Kwalunga : Ok.

(I went back to my seat and ordered a vodka. I need to lose myself because Star is driving me nuts.)

Thomas : You good?

Kwalunga : Yeah

Anthony : Let's get another round ladies and gentlemen.

(A woman joined us and sat on my lap)

Her : Hey bad boy

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : I'm not a bad boy sweetheart.

Her : Those gloves make you one and bad boys make me wet (She whispered)

(I laughed)

Star : Excuse Miss thang

(Star? When did she get here?)

(Thomas and Anthony are shocked)

Kwalunga : Star what do you want?

Star : No Morgan. What is she doing on your lap?

Kwalunga : Don't start with me Star

Star : Get your ass off from that lap bitch

(The lady ran away)

Kwalunga : Star follow me

(She followed me to the bathroom)

Star : What was that Morgan?

Kwalunga : What do you want from me woman!? (I shouted)

Star : What was that bitch doing on your lap.

Kwalunga : That's none of your business!

Star : Morgan!!! (She screamed)

(I pushed her inside the bathroom and locked the door. I kissed her lips down to her neck. she moaned)

Star : Morgan wait (She whispered)

Kwalunga : This is what you want. Right?

(I ran my hand under her short skirt. My fingers reached her clit. She wrapped her leg

around my waist. I was inside her pussy working my two fingers in and out. I went deeper. She screamed a bit louder. Now I know I've hit the right spot. I massaged her G spot)

Star : Oh Morgan. Yes! Yes! I want this baby. Fuck! I want this.

(I kissed her. she moaned in my mouth)

(Her body vibrated. I unbuttoned my jeans and my dick slipped inside her. The warmth of her pussy drove me to the edge. I groaned. thrusting her.)

Kwalunga : Oh shit!

Star : I wanna cum Morgan.

Kwalunga : Cum with me sweetheart.

(I pumped harder and deeper. We both needed to catch our breath as the orgasm took over)

Star : Damn you Morgan.

(Her head fell on my shoulder)

(I fixed myself and walked out. Leaving her behind)

Chapter 28

(I reached our table. Everyone was staring at me.)

Tina : You are a bad boy.

Kwalunga : What have I done?

(I asked. Taking a sip of my beer)

Anthony : She left a lipstick on the collar of your shirt.

(My eyes are wide open)

Kwalunga : What?

Thomas : Exactly that.

Kwalunga : We need to go.

Anthony : That's what I thought. (He laughed)

(I saw Star walking out of the Pub. I wonder what she is thinking)

Thomas : Isn't that Suffocate's daughter Sky?

Kwalunga : It's her. (I smiled)

Tina : She is no longer Sky but Star (She laughed)

(Thomas is looking at me)

Thomas : You are falling for this girl Morgan.

Kwalunga : Never.

Tina : Can we just call you Morgan. Permanently? (She smiled)

Kwalunga : No ways. I am Kwalunga Hlela. Morgan is just for fuck purposes.

(We laughed)

Mia : Please let's go babe.

Thomas : Guys. We are out of here.

Tina : Yeah Yeah. (She rolled her eyes)

Kwalunga : I'm also going now. I need some rest.

Anthony : I'm sure you do. After that bathroom trip.

Kwalunga : Fuck you Anthony.

(I laughed and walked away)

(I parked my car inside my garage and I couldn't stop thinking about Star/Sky. I had

a grin thinking about her. I got out of the car and went inside my house. My phone rang)

Kwalunga : Kwalunga speaking (I answered)

Lunga we need to talk.

(It's Meloni Washington)

Kwalunga : We do?

(I asked while opening the door and walking in)

Meloni : Yes I'm not feeling well.

Kwalunga : Sorry. I guess.

Meloni : I think I'm pregnant.

(My door slid open and Star walked in. This is a nice surprise)

Meloni : Are you still there?

Kwalunga : Yeah Yeah sure. What were you saying?

(Star smiled and walked closer to me. She kissed my neck while she undid my jeans. She was on her knees)

Meloni : I said I think I'm pregnant.

(Star was sucking the hell out of me. Deep throat. I groaned louder)

Kwalunga : Meloni I don't understand ho... Ah fuck! (Star was doing the Lord's work)

Meloni : Lunga what the fuck?

(I'm hanging up this call)

Kwalunga : Call me later. I'm busy. (I hung up)

Kwalunga : Fuck! don't stop sweetheart.

(She went faster)

(I closed my eyes and I bursted. She swallowed every drop.)

Kwalunga : You will be the death of me.

(She got up)

Star : I'm hungry. May I cook?

(I'm shocked)

Kwalunga : Please sweetheart.

(She opened my wall cabinet and took out meatballs and Spaghetti)

Meloni : Do you like meatballs?

Kwalunga : I don't know. Tina bought that.

Star : Tina? (She frowned)

Kwalunga : A friend of mine.

Star : Oh

(She is jealous. I laughed)

Star : What?

Kwalunga : Nothing Sweetheart.

Star : Do you have wine?

Kwalunga : No. Beer.

Star : Ok. Go and buy one. White.

Kwalunga : Say please sweetheart.

Star : Please baby. (She pouted)

(She is so beautiful)

Kwalunga : Come here.

(She ran to me and I kissed her)

Star : You wanted to taste yourself? (She laughed)

(Thomas was right. I'm falling for Sky and it's scaring me)

Kwalunga : Don't be silly. White wine?

Star : Yes please.

(I headed out)

Star : Baby?

Kwalunga : Yeah

(She threw me keys)

Star : Your car keys

(See? She is driving me crazy)

(I came back 30 minutes later and she was already eating and watching TV)

Star : Food in the oven.

(Star is like her father. She doesn't speak much when she speaks it's like she can't wait to finish.)

Kwalunga : Your wine.

(She placed her food aside and took a glass. She poured her wine. I took my food and sat down at the table in the kitchen)

Star : Baby I miss you here.

(I took my food and sat down next to her. She took her fork and ate with me on my plate. Women are crazy)

(The time was 22h00. I was tired. Star's wine is almost finished and she is drunk now)

Star : What with these gloves?

Kwalunga : Nothing for you to worry about.

Star : Life must be nice for you hey? You just woke up one day and decided to reside in Italy.

(I shook my head. She has no idea)

Star : It is. Look at your house and that car out there. Rich parents?

(I laughed)

Star : You work in a restaurant so I'm sure you can't afford this house and that car. It can only mean one thing. Rich parents.

(I was wrong. She speaks a lot)

Kwalunga : No.

Star : Bugiardo (Liar). You know how I wish to leave Italy and start over somewhere else.

Kwalunga : Why?

Star : Vita (Life)

Kwalunga : That bad?

Star : Yes. I'm tired of the lies Morgan.

(We are getting somewhere)

Kwalunga : What lies?

(She is silent)

Star : My mother is alive. She faked her own death and my father believes she is dead. My father believes that she killed her.

(Bingo!)

Kwalunga : That's terrible.

Star : I don't want to be a prostitute but I learned from my mother. She told me this is an easy way to make money. She introduced me to drugs and she told me it was going to numb the pain.

(This cuts deep)

Star : We had nothing Morgan and we needed money. One day I was in Navona Square doing my job.

Kwalunga : Prostituting?

Star : Yeah. Some guy walked in and he had lots of money. He took me to a hotel room but when we got there my father was waiting for me. He almost killed me (She laughed) I told him that I needed money. He cried. my father cried so much Morgan.

(I saw tears running down her face and she stood up and wiped them away)

Star : He wasn't working so he felt like a failure. I promised him that I would stop selling my body and I stopped but not with drugs. I kept going back for drugs. One day my friends and I went to Vatican city. We went to the club and we had a night of our lives. We drank and sniffed cocaine then boom eight men walked in carrying guns. They took money and phones. They shot people in

that club. You know who was the leader of that gang?

Kwalunga : Nah.

Star : Alessio Suffocate Das. My very own father.

(I sighed)

Star : I hate him. My mother and I left him. We moved out and we started working from home. Men of all ages came home and fucked us then they paid us. My mother was proud of me. One day it was after midnight and my mother was with her client and Suffocate walked in. He went straight to my mother's room and he strangled my mother. I don't know what happened to her client but he was gone. My father strangled my mother.

(She is crying again and I don't know what to do. I just let her)

Star : He thought she was dead and he ran away. I also thought my mother was dead. I slept next to her and I cried until I fell asleep. Next morning my mother was gone and I knew she wasn't dead. She called me and said she was moving to Vietnam. My father was missing. I was on my own.

Kwalunga : I'm sorry.

Star : Don't. 3 months later my father made contact and he offered me money but I refused it. I was my own woman and I didn't need his bloody money. I heard he was arrested for murder. He is in Rebibbia Prison. Serving his time. (She smiled)

Kwalunga : Tell me about the kidnap.

(She is shocked)

Star : How do you know about my kidnap?

(I cleared my throat. Fuck!)

Kwalunga : It was all over the news.

(She shrugged)

Star : It was one of Suffocate's enemies.
That was their way of getting back at me by
using me.

Kwalunga : I see.

Star : You should be grateful

Sponsored

we need to talk.

(It's Meloni Washington)

Kwalunga : We do?

(I asked while opening the door and walking in)

Meloni : Yes I'm not feeling well.

Kwalunga : Sorry. I guess.

Meloni : I think I'm pregnant.

(My door slid open and Star walked in. This is a nice surprise)

Meloni : Are you still there?

Kwalunga : Yeah Yeah sure. What were you saying?

(Star smiled and walked closer to me. She kissed my neck while she undid my jeans. She was on her knees)

Meloni : I said I think I'm pregnant.

(Star was sucking the hell out of me. Deep throat. I groaned louder)

Kwalunga : Meloni I don't understand ho... Ah fuck! (Star was doing the Lord's work)

Meloni : Lunga what the fuck?

(I'm hanging up this call)

Kwalunga : Call me later. I'm busy. (I hung up)

Kwalunga : Fuck! don't stop sweetheart.

(She went faster)

(I closed my eyes and I bursted. She swallowed every drop.)

Kwalunga : You will be the death of me.

(She got up)

Star : I'm hungry. May I cook?

(I'm shocked)

Kwalunga : Please sweetheart.

(She opened my wall cabinet and took out meatballs and Spaghetti)

Meloni : Do you like meatballs?

Kwalunga : I don't know. Tina bought that.

Star : Tina? (She frowned)

Kwalunga : A friend of mine.

Star : Oh

(She is jealous. I laughed)

Star : What?

Kwalunga : Nothing Sweetheart.

Star : Do you have wine?

Kwalunga : No. Beer.

Star : Ok. Go and buy one. White.

Kwalunga : Say please sweetheart.

Star : Please baby. (She pouted)

(She is so beautiful)

Kwalunga : Come here.

(She ran to me and I kissed her)

Star : You wanted to taste yourself? (She laughed)

(Thomas was right. I'm falling for Sky and it's scaring me)

Kwalunga : Don't be silly. White wine?

Star : Yes please.

(I headed out)

Star : Baby?

Kwalunga : Yeah

(She threw me keys)

Star : Your car keys

(See? She is driving me crazy)

(I came back 30 minutes later and she was already eating and watching TV)

Star : Food in the oven.

(Star is like her father. She doesn't speak much when she speaks it's like she can't wait to finish.)

Kwalunga : Your wine.

(She placed her food aside and took a glass. She poured her wine. I took my food and sat down at the table in the kitchen)

Star : Baby I miss you here.

(I took my food and sat down next to her. She took her fork and ate with me on my plate. Women are crazy)

(The time was 22h00. I was tired. Star's wine is almost finished and she is drunk now)

Star : What with these gloves?

Kwalunga : Nothing for you to worry about.

Star : Life must be nice for you hey? You just woke up one day and decided to reside in Italy.

(I shook my head. She has no idea)

Star : It is. Look at your house and that car out there. Rich parents?

(I laughed)

Star : You work in a restaurant so I'm sure you can't afford this house and that car. It can only mean one thing. Rich parents.

(I was wrong. She speaks a lot)

Kwalunga : No.

Star : Bugiardo (Liar). You know how I wish to leave Italy and start over somewhere else.

Kwalunga : Why?

Star : Vita (Life)

Kwalunga : That bad?

Star : Yes. I'm tired of the lies Morgan.

(We are getting somewhere)

Kwalunga : What lies?

(She is silent)

Star : My mother is alive. She faked her own death and my father believes she is dead. My father believes that she killed her.

(Bingo!)

Kwalunga : That's terrible.

Star : I don't want to be a prostitute but I learned from my mother. She told me this is an easy way to make money. She introduced me to drugs and she told me it was going to numb the pain.

(This cuts deep)

Star : We had nothing Morgan and we needed money. One day I was in Navona Square doing my job.

Kwalunga : Prostituting?

Star : Yeah. Some guy walked in and he had lots of money. He took me to a hotel room but when we got there my father was waiting for me. He almost killed me (She laughed) I told him that I needed money. He cried. my father cried so much Morgan.

(I saw tears running down her face and she stood up and wiped them away)

Star : He wasn't working so he felt like a failure. I promised him that I would stop selling my body and I stopped but not with drugs. I kept going back for drugs. One day my friends and I went to Vatican city. We went to the club and we had a night of our lives. We drank and sniffed cocaine then boom eight men walked in carrying guns. They took money and phones. They shot people in that club. You know who was the leader of that gang?

Kwalunga : Nah.

Star : Alessio Suffocate Das. My very own father.

(I sighed)

Star : I hate him. My mother and I left him. We moved out and we started working from home. Men of all ages came home and fucked us then they paid us. My mother was proud of me. One day it was after midnight and my mother was with her client and Suffocate walked in. He went straight to my mother's room and he strangled my mother. I don't know what happened to her client but he was gone. My father strangled my mother.

(She is crying again and I don't know what to do. I just let her)

Star : He thought she was dead and he ran away. I also thought my mother was dead. I slept next to her and I cried until I fell asleep. Next morning my mother was gone and I knew she wasn't dead. She called me

and said she was moving to Vietnam. My father was missing. I was on my own.

Kwalunga : I'm sorry.

Star : Don't. 3 months later my father made contact and he offered me money but I refused it. I was my own woman and I didn't need his bloody money. I heard he was arrested for murder. He is in Rebibbia Prison. Serving his time. (She smiled)

Kwalunga : Tell me about the kidnap.

(She is shocked)

Star : How do you know about my kidnap?

(I cleared my throat. Fuck!)

Kwalunga : It was all over the news.

(She shrugged)

Star : It was one of Suffocate's enemies. That was their way of getting back at me by using me.

Kwalunga : I see.

Star : You should be grateful Morgan. Life is hard out there and you know nothing about it. You are just a man who grew up with a silver spoon in his mouth.

Kwalunga : You know nothing about me or my life so drop it.

(I'm getting angry. What the fuck does she know about my life?)

Star : Oh please. I know men like you.

(I closed my eyes and clenched my teeth)

Chapter 29

Kwalunga : Men like me? You know men like me? You know nothing about me Sky!! (I shouted)

(Her eyes are wide open and her breathing grew louder)

Star : How do you know my name Morgan? Suffocate sent you. Isn't it?

Kwalunga : I am not Morgan. My name is Kwalunga Hlela.

(She rubbed her face)

Kwalunga : No. Suffocate got nothing to do with this but I know your father.

Sky : Who are you?

Kwalunga : I thought you knew me.

(I ran upstairs. She followed me)

Sky : Morgan!!! (She shouted)

Kwalunga : I'm not Morgan. I told you.

Kwalunga : You have no idea of who I am. You know nothing about my life. You have no idea what it feels like to be an orphan. You have no idea how it feels like going to bed hungry. You have no idea how it feels like watching your mother burn to death and bury her ashes!!!(I yelled)

(She is crying)

Kwalunga : You have no idea what it is like losing all the people you love in one year. You have no idea what it is like leaving someone you love with all of your heart and soul because you had to hustle for a living. You have no fuckin idea what it like to be forced to drop out of school. You have no idea what it is like losing your dog. Have you ever served some time in a foreign prison?

(She shook her head)

Kwalunga : I thought so. You have no idea what it is like to be tortured in prison let alone to be arrested for something you don't know. Sky

Sponsored

you see these gloves? I hate them but I have no choice because what lies underneath them scares me. I was tortured in prison and I almost died but the man that you hate the most saved me.

Sky : My father?

Kwalunga : Your father. He saved me from Chelsea Cameron and when I finally got out of prison I was so happy. I was going home to the woman I loved. I was going home to my Sunflower but when I arrived home she was dead and I arrived at her funeral.

(I broke down in tears)

Kwalunga : You don't know me Sky.

Sky : I'm so sorry. I'm so sorry.

Kwalunga : You know? I didn't know what it feels like to cry. To be angry because my father didn't allow me to cry. To be angry. I kept it all inside and carried it all by myself.

(She hugged me and we both cried)

(I didn't know I had so much on my shoulders until this moment)

(We only cuddled that night and I must say that I love Sky Das. This is love)

(I woke up the next morning with breakfast in bed. I could live with this.)

Sky : Morning Morgan.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Kwalunga sweetheart.

Sky : Kal..No I will stick to Morgan. Please baby.

(She struggled with Kwalunga. I guess we are sticking to Morgan)

Sky : You are my Morgan.

(She kissed me)

Kwalunga : Your Morgan? (I smiled)

Sky : My Morgan and I'm your Star.

(Fuck I love that)

Sky : Let's make this official.

Kwalunga : Are you serious?

Sky : Yeah. I love you Morgan.

(My heart skipped a bit. I thought of Zinzi. She wanted me to be happy and Sky makes me happy)

Kwalunga : I love you too Star.

(She smiled and her face dropped)

Sky : How was my father?

Kwalunga : He loves you so much and he misses you. You are the only person he spoke about.

(She smiled)

Kwalunga : He begged me to look for you and take care of you. When you were kidnapped I blamed myself.

Sky : You had a lot going on.

Kwalunga : Yeah but I killed those bastards and I'm happy I did.

Sky : You killed them?

Kwalunga : Yes Sky and I do not regret it. I would do it all over again any given day.

(She gulped)

Kwalunga : I'm not perfect.

Sky : And I love you with all your imperfections.

Kwalunga : Come here.

(I hugged her and squeezed her in my arms)

Sky : Let me see your hands.

Kwalunga : No.

Sky : Please baby.

(I shook my head)

Kwalunga : No. Please

Sky : Ok. Ok baby.

Kwalunga : Thank you.

Sky : I'm not going back there. I'm done selling my body to those idiots.

(I sighed in relief)

Kwalunga : Do you mean that?

Sky : Yes baby yes (She whispered) This body is all yours now and yours only. Take it my love.

(Before I made love to her I kissed her slowly taking my time. Kissing every spot and every inch in her body. My woman is beautiful)

(I arrived at Reds and I was late. I'm always late these days. Anthony wasn't in his office. I checked on Thomas. His door was closed. I pushed it.)

Thomas : What happened to knocking!!? (He yelled)

Kwalunga : Jeez I'm so... (I paused)

(Tina's legs were spread wide on Thomas's desk. He is fucking her)

Kwalunga : What the fuck?

(My eyes are wide open. Tina doesn't care. She is speaking in tongues enjoying Thomas's dick.)

Thomas : Lunga Out!!! (He screamed)

(I slammed the door on my way out. What the fuck?. Anthony was making his way to Thomas's office. He is carrying a file and his laptop)

Kwalunga : Stay out of that door.

Anthony : Why?

(He is confused)

Kwalunga : They at it.

Anthony : Mia is here?

Kwalunga : No Tina is screaming Thomas's name.

Anthony : You kidding. Right?

Kwalunga : I wish.

(Anthony laughed)

Anthony : I knew it.

Kwalunga : Same here.

(We both laughed)

Anthony : Bruh. Suffocate called just now.

Kwalunga : For real?

Anthony : Yep. He wants us to drop the Investigation. His daughter called him and she confessed.

Kwalunga : About her mother being alive?

Anthony : You knew?

Kwalunga : Yes. She told me yesterday.

Anthony : At the Pub?

Kwalunga : No. She came to my house last night.

Anthony : Tell me you fucked her again.

Kwalunga : No. I made love to her.

(He is shocked. I left him hanging)

Chapter 30

(2 MONTHS LATER)

(Sky moved in with me and I must say that I love having her around.)

Sky : I want to see my father.

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

Sky : Yes I'm ready. Black or Gray?

Kwalunga :What

Sky : Cravatta (Necktie)

(She is holding both neckties in her hands)

Kwalunga : Gray

(I'm busy getting ready for work)

Sky : Nero (Black)

(I shook my head. Why did she ask me in the first place? I took the black necktie from her and put it on)

Sky : Let me help you with that.

(She fixed my necktie and then she kissed me)

Kwalunga : So you are going to Rebibbia?

Sky : I was hoping that you would come with me.

Kwalunga : I don't know Sky.

Sky : Please baby.

(She wrapped her arms around my neck and caressed the back of my head. She looked at me with eyes full of lust)

Kwalunga : No don't that.

Sky : What baby?

(She loosened my necktie and unbuttoned my shirt. She sucked my neck)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I need to go.

Sky : Not now. I'm horny baby.

Kwalunga : You are always horny.

(I glanced at the clock. I'm already 5 minutes late)

Sky : Do you blame me?

(She ran her hand around my dick and bit her lower lip)

(I can't resist this. I ran my hand around her butts and she had no panties on. I turned her around and pushed her to the wall while I undid my pants. I entered her from behind. She dug her nails on the wall. Condom was no longer a thing anymore. I was busy fucking my woman and boom Meloni was watching us on my door step)

(I slowly pulled out and tucked my dick inside my pants)

Kwalunga : What are you doing here?

Meloni : Now I see why you weren't at your office.

(Sky rubbed her face. She does that a lot when she is angry)

Sky : Morgan. Chi e questo? (Morgan who's this?)

Kwalunga : Nobody.

(Meloni chuckled)

Meloni : Morgan? Anyway my name is Meloni. Meloni Washington. Lunga's baby mama.

Kwalunga : Udakiwe.

Sky : Morgan what the fuck is she talking about?

Meloni : I'm pregnant Lunga.

Kwalunga : Uyadakwa wena. You said you are on contraceptives so don't fuck with me Meloni.

(Sky is pacing the room. Her face is red. She is angry.)

Meloni : I don't know how it happened Lunga.

(She is crying and I don't give a shit)

Kwalunga : Stop lying to me!!! (I yelled)

Meloni : I'm not lying. I swear.

Sky : When did you fuck this woman Morgan?
Was it after you fucked me or before that?

Kwalunga : Sky please baby calm down.

(Thomas is blowing up my phone)

Meloni : I can prove to you that I'm pregnant.

Kwalunga : Meloni please leave.

Meloni : But we need to talk.

Kwalunga : Get out!!!!

Meloni : You will regret this Lunga.

(I walked closer to her)

Kwalunga : Is that a threat?

Meloni : No. It's a promise

(She walked out)

Kwalunga : Sky I'm sorry baby. It only happened once. Before I met you.

(She gave me my laptop bag and my jacket)

Sky : Get out Morgan.

Kwalunga : Look ba...

Sky : Save it and go to work. It's getting late.

(She cut me off before I finished. I took my things and I left)

(I arrived at True Red 50 minutes later and Thomas was waiting for me in my office)

Kwalunga : Thomas

Thomas : You know I thought Tina was the only one with Chronic lateness.

Kwalunga : Chro what?

(I asked while taking out my laptop)

Thomas : Look at your neck. You were busy fucking Alessio's daughter during your time of work.

Kwalunga : That's very rich coming from you.

(I touched my neck like I was expecting to feel something)

Thomas : It's a bloody love bite. start working Lunga!! (He screamed while walking out)

(Anthony walked in)

Anthony : Meloni was here. Looking for you.

Kwalunga : I know. She came to my house

Anthony : Are you still fucking her?

Kwalunga : Hell no.

Anthony : Good. I don't like her.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : I hope you will like my baby because she is carrying my baby.

(His mouth gape open)

Anthony : She is pregnant?

Kwalunga : That's what she told me this morning.

Anthony : I don't know. Congratulations?

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : No. She is lying man.

Anthony : What if she is not?

(I sighed)

Kwalunga : That will mean a lot to me. I know it will fuck up my relationship with Sky but I want to be part of my baby's life Anthony.

You know the way I spoke to Meloni cut me deep bruh. I shouldn't have spoken to her like that.

Anthony : That bad?

Kwalunga : I lost it.

Anthony : Call her and make amends.

Kwalunga : Yeah right.

Anthony : I mean it Lunga. Swallow your pride and do the right thing.

Kwalunga : What if Sky leaves me because of this whole thing?

Anthony : Do you love her that much?

Kwalunga : Yeah man but not to a point where I would choose her over my own flesh and blood.

Anthony : I feel you man. I feel you.

(I took my phone and dialed Meloni's number. It rang and rang. She didn't pick up)

Kwalunga : Meloni. It's Lunga and I just wanted to apologize for what happened earlier. I'm ready to talk. Please call me when you get this. (I left a voice message)

Anthony : No answer?

Kwalunga : Yeah. How are things going with Mrs Gasto's case?

Anthony : She won't budge.

Kwalunga : She is suing us?

Anthony : Yep and Thomas is going to kill me.

Kwalunga : What is her prize?

Anthony : 50 000 EUR

(My mouth gape open)

Kwalunga : What!!!!!!

Anthony : It's not bad.

Kwalunga : That's almost R 860 000. She is not getting a cent from us. Give me her file.

Anthony : Lunga it's my fault. I didn't get my facts right.

Kwalunga : Let's go to your office. Tell me more about this case.

(We walked to his office and he was busy explaining on our way.)

Anthony : You know the bookstore in Genzano di Roma?

Kwalunga : What about it?

Anthony : The bookstore was not owned by anyone. It was empty so Mrs Knight bought the bookstore from Mr Calvino who claimed it was his place but it turned out that he was lying and he ran away with Mrs Knight's money and later on Mrs Gasto's claimed that the bookstore belongs to her place and she vandalized it.

(We walked inside his office)

Kwalunga : And Mrs Knight asked you to investigate the matter?

Anthony : Exactly. I did my research and the bookstore wasn't under Mrs Gasto's so I advised Mrs Knight to open a case. Lunga she vandalised her bookstore. You should have seen it.

Kwalunga : Ok what happened after that?

Anthony : She came to my house with proof of ownership and yep she owns the bookstore.

Kwalunga : And Mr Calvino?

Anthony : He is Mrs Gasto's Ben 10. He is the one who was looking after the bookstore before It was sold out.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Isn't Mrs Gasto's married?

(I went through the file with all the information)

Anthony : Her husband died along with her daughter in a car accident. So she needed some dick and Calvino was available.

Kwalunga : How old is Mrs Gasto's?

Anthony : She is 53.

Kwalunga : Calvino?

Anthony : 22.

Kwalunga : What the fuck?

Anthony : It's crazy. I know.

Kwalunga : This is proof of ownership?

(I asked while looking at the document)

Anthony : That's the one.

Kwalunga : Is it legit?

(He is silent)

Kwalunga : Caldo!!!! (I shouted)

Anthony : I don't know. (He rubbed the back of his neck)

Kwalunga : You are useless Caldo. I'll take it from here.

(I took the file and walked out to my office)

Chapter 31

(It took me 6 hours to wrap up the Investigation. Firstly the papers were fake and Mrs Gasto's is not the owner of the bookstore. The bookstore belongs to her daughter who passed away.)

(Thomas walked in)

Thomas : Aren't you going home?

Kwalunga : I am going home. I'm done here.

Thomas : What are you working on?

(I cleared my throat. I won't do that to Anthony)

Kwalunga : No nothing major.

Anthony : Did you find anything Lunga? Oh Thomas I didn't know you here.

(Anthony said walking in)

Tina : Come Tommy let's go!!! (She shouted from outside)

Thomas : I'm out of here.

(He walked out. I wonder If Mia knows that his boyfriend is a bad guy?)

Kwalunga : Tell Mrs Gasto's to go and fuck herself because she is not getting any money

from True Red. Everything you need is here.
I'm going home. Bye.

(I took my jacket and my car keys)

Anthony : Lunga wait

(I'm out)

(I arrived home and Sky was sleeping on a couch. She is so beautiful. I thought she would leave after Meloni's drama this morning)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart?

(I kissed her cheek. She is sleeping for real)

(I placed my laptop on the table and I scooped her up and took her to our bedroom. She laughed)

Kwalunga : You bastard (I laughed)

Sky : It's nice to be carried to the bedroom

Kwalunga : So you made me think that you were sleeping?

(We laughed)

Sky : You are late today.

(She is wearing my hoodie and it suits her. I kissed her all over her neck while placing her in bed)

Kwalunga : I know baby. I was working on something.

Sky : I hope it has nothing to do with that bitch.

Kwalunga : No baby. I was helping Anthony with his investigation.

Sky : What if she is pregnant?

Kwalunga : I want to be part of the baby.

(She sat up)

Sky : Are you serious right now?

Kwalunga : Yes

(She stood up and opened our closet)

Kwalunga : What are you doing?

Sky : I'm packing my clothes. I'm going back home

Kwalunga : Oh please don't be ridiculous Sky.
You are not going anywhere

Sky : Watch me.

(She packed her clothes in her suitcase)

Kwalunga : Sky please don't go.

Sky : What is this?

(It's a small box with Zinzi's ring and a watch that I bought for her)

Kwalunga : Put it back.

Sky : No!!! (She screamed)

Kwalunga : I said put it back Sky.

(She opened the box and took out a box with Zinzi's ring)

Sky : Is it for her? Fuck Morgan. You want to marry her?

Kwalunga : No hell No

Sky : You are lying.

(She took out a watch and smashed it on the wall. I lost it)

Kwalunga : What the fuck have you done?

(I grabbed her by her neck and pinned her against the wall. I tightened my hand around her neck. She was fighting me to let her go. I stopped and she coughed)

Kwalunga : Get out of my house.

(I took her clothes and threw them out of my room)

Kwalunga : Out!!! (I yelled)

Sky : I'm sorry

(Tears are running down her face and I'm boiling with anger so I don't give a fuck about her tears)

Kwalunga : Fuck off!!

(She walked out)

Kwalunga : Aaaaaaaaaaah!!!! (I screamed)

(I started banging the wall with my fists. I took out Zinzi's picture and I broke down in tears)

Kwalunga : Sunflower I'm sorry. I'm sorry my love Sky.

(She opened the box and took out a box with Zinzi's ring)

Sky : Is it for her? Fuck Morgan. You want to marry her?

Kwalunga : No hell No

Sky : You are lying.

(She took out a watch and smashed it on the wall. I lost it)

Kwalunga : What the fuck have you done?

(I grabbed her by her neck and pinned her against the wall. I tightened my hand around

her neck. She was fighting me to let her go. I stopped and she coughed)

Kwalunga : Get out of my house.

(I took her clothes and threw them out of my room)

Kwalunga : Out!!! (I yelled)

Sky : I'm sorry

(Tears are running down her face and I'm boiling with anger so I don't give a fuck about her tears)

Kwalunga : Fuck off!!

(She walked out)

Kwalunga : Aaaaaaaaaaah!!!! (I screamed)

(I started banging the wall with my fists. I took out Zinzi's picture and I broke down in tears)

Kwalunga : Sunflower I'm sorry. I'm sorry my love please forgive me.

(I cried until I couldn't cry no more. I took my keys and walked out. Sky was gone. I drove to the bar)

(I sat down and I ordered a whole bottle of Vodka. I drank from the bottle.)

Easy handsome

(A woman said while she was sitting down. I hate this country and I hate everything about Italy right now)

Kwalunga : Who said you can sit?

Her : It's an empty spot.

Kwalunga : Fakof!

Her : Easy tiger. Rough day?

(What the fuck is wrong with this woman)

Kwalunga : None of your business.

(She moved her chair closer to mine and she put her hand under the table. I felt her hand around my dick. She massaged my balls. I groaned.)

(What is wrong with Italian women? If they want something they go for it. Just like that?)

(I removed her hand from my dick)

Kwalunga : Just go

Her : No. I want you.

Kwalunga : Follow me.

(I stood up and I stumbled a bit. I had more than enough of vodka. I walked to my car and she followed me. I felt like someone was watching me. I looked around the parking lot and there was no one)

Her : What's wrong lover boy?

(I grabbed her roughly and pressed her against my car with her back facing me. I ran my hand under her tight dress and pulled it up. She was wearing a G-string. I tore it apart)

Her : Are you going to fuck me out h.....Ah
fuck

(I was inside her. Pumping her)

Kwalunga : This is what you want. Right?

Her : Yes! Yes! Yes! Ah fuck. This is amazing.

(I don't feel anything. I'm angry. I'm
thinking about Zinzi and Sky. I tightened my
hand at the back of her neck and spanked
her tiny ass with my other hand. She
creamed)

Kwalunga : Shut the fuck up. You said you
want this. Right?

Her: Yes! Fuck me.

(I went in harder. Quickening the pace. This is not me anymore. I'm angry and I'm using her to let out all of my anger. I thought of Zinzi inside that coffin. I thought of Sky smashing her watch. That watch and that ring meant so much to me)

(I was strangling her from the back of her neck)

Her : Cum with me baby.

Kwalunga : Ey fakok wena.

(She moaned. She thinks this is normal)

Morgan what are you doing?

(Heavenly father that was Sky. She was standing behind me. I closed my eyes and clenched my teeth. I pulled out)

Sky : Morgan what the fuck are you doing?

Kwalunga : Baby listen.

Sky : Please tell me that you at least used a condom.

(Tears are flowing down her face. There is no condom. I am one stupid motherfucker)

(My fuck buddy ran away)

Kwalunga : I did (I lied)

Sky : Where is it? I want to see it!!!! (She yelled)

Kwalunga : Baby (I stumbled again)

(Fuck I'm so drunk)

Sky : Don't baby me!!! You are a reckless motherfucker

(She raised her hand. She wants to slap me. I blocked her and held her arm)

Kwalunga : Don't you dare.

(She screamed)

Sky : I hate you Morgan.

Kwalunga : You did this to me.

Sky : How Morgan?

Kwalunga : Let's go home. Our home.

(I got in the passenger seat and my eyes were heavy. I closed them and I passed out)

(I woke up the next morning and I was sleeping on a couch. Wow)

(I was feeling sick. I had too much alcohol last night. I called Thomas)

Kwalunga : Thomas I won't make it today

Thomas : Pussy will kill you my boy.

Kwalunga : I'm sick Thomas

Thomas : Jah. Jah.

Kwalunga : Are you at the office?

Thomas : On my way.

Kwalunga : Please tell Anthony to check his emails.

Thomas : Will do. Bye.

(He hung up)

(I went upstairs to my room and Sky was still sleeping. She was hurt. I fucked up)

(I went to the bathroom and brushed my teeth and I walked back to the bedroom and I got in the bed. I wrapped my arm around her waist. She moved closer. My dick touched her ass and I felt my erection. I have a strong libido good people and I can't control it.)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart are you awake?

(Silence)

(I ran my hand down to her pussy. She opened her legs a bit more. She is not sleeping she is fooling around. I ran my fingers around her clit. She moaned. I kissed her neck and I was on top of her)

Sky : Condom please.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart come on.

Sky : No Morgan from today condom is your new friend.

(I sighed)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry about last night Sky. I don't know what happened.

Sky : You can't keep your dick in your pants. That's what happened.

Kwalunga : I'm sorry.

Sky : You need to get tested.

Kwalunga : Oh please.

Sky : You are the one who is sleeping around putting my life at risk.

(I hate to admit it but she is right.I've been very reckless lately)

Kwalunga : Fine. I'll do it

Sky : Good. Today I'm going to Rebebbia to see my father.

Kwalunga : I'm coming with you.

(She is shocked)

Sky : Are you serious?

Kwalunga : Yeah

(I moved from her)

Sky : You don't have to.

Kwalunga : I insist. Sky I'm sorry about last night. I'm sorry I strangled you. I'm sorry I kicked you out and I'm sorry that I fucked that bitch.

Sky : I'm sorry too about everything I did.

Kwalunga : That watch and that ring was for Zinzi. I bought it for her but I didn't get a chance to give it to her.

Sky : It's ok baby. It's ok I understand.

Kwalunga : I love you.

Sky : I love you more my love and I love you so much.

Kwalunga : Let's go and see Suffocate.

(She smiled)

(We arrived at Rebibbia Prison and we sat down waiting for Suffocate. He arrived dragging a chain in his ankles. His hands were cuffed. He just stood there with a grin on his face)

Suffocate : Principessa (Princess)

Sky : Babbo (Dad)

(She ran to him and squeezed him but Suffocate couldn't hug his daughter back because he was in handcuffs)

Suffocate : *Mi sei mancato* (I missed you)

Sky : *Lo so babbo* (I know dad)

(Suffocate is blinking a lot. He is fighting back his tears. They sat down and Sky was wiping her tears. I want to comfort her but not with Suffocate around)

Suffocate : *Grazie Lunga*. (Thanks Lunga)

Kwalunga : No don't thank me man. She is the one who begged me to come with her.

Suffocate : *Veramente?* (Really?)

Sky : Volevo vederti babbo. E stato difficile senza di te (I wanted to see you dad. It's been difficult without you.)

Suffocate : Lo so piccola (I know baby)

Sky : Si e trasferita per Vietnam (She moved to Vietnam)

(She is talking about her mother. Can they just speak English.)

Suffocate : Come sei sopravvissuto? (How did you survive?)

Sky : Lei ha mandato dei soldi (She sent me some money)

(She looked at me. I know she is lying)

Suffocate : Sei bellissima. Lunga prendersi cura di te? (You look beautiful. Lunga is taking care of you?)

(She laughed)

Sky : Lui e bravo (He is good)

Suffocate : Lunga I owe you a lot. Thank you man.

(I shrugged)

Suffocate : Please make sure she stays away from boys.

(I'm the one fucking her Suffocate)

Kwalunga : I will make sure. I promise

(Sky rubbed the back of her neck)

(We talked until our time was over. We had to go)

Sky : Ti amo babbo (I love you dad)

(She is crying)

Suffocate : Ti amo anch'io mio angelo (I love you too my angel)

(It was sad leaving Suffocate behind)

Chapter 32

(It was already dark when we drove back to my house and Sky was over the moon with joy. She was dancing to Sexyback by Justin

Timberlake. I was happy that she went to visit his father.)

Kwalunga : Are you hungry?

Sky : Yes baby.

Kwalunga : Let's get something to eat.

Sky : No I don't mean food. I want my dick.

Kwalunga : And I'm talking about real food.

(My neck was killing and I kept cracking it)

Sky : Let me drive.

Kwalunga : Let's stop by the restaurant then you will drive from there.

Sky : Is your neck that bad?

Kwalunga : I slept on a couch. Of course it's that bad Sweetheart.

(She laughed)

Kwalunga : It's not funny.

Sky : I know how to make you feel better.

(Before I knew it her hand was inside my sweatpants and she was rubbing my dick)

Kwalunga : Sky. I'm driving please stop that.

(My phone rang. It was Thomas. I answered and put him on a loudspeaker) "

Kwalunga : Yeah Tommy

Thomas : Oh you are feeling better now.
Please come to work tomorrow. We miss you.

(I laughed. I felt Sky's tongue licking my
dick. I parked my car on the side of the
road.)

Kwalunga : You guys miss me for real?

(Sky sucked me. I tightened my hand on my
steering wheel)

Thomas : I heard about Mrs Gasto suing
Red.

(Sky is milking my dick. I'm holding my
breath)

Kwalunga : Baby Stop (I muttered)

Thomas : Lunga?

Kwalunga : Yeah but I took c...ah fuck! (I groaned)

Thomas : Fuck you Lunga (He hung up)

(I'm sorry about that Thomas)

Kwalunga : Oh shit.

(There is a knock on my window. It's a cop. I rolled down half of my window)

Kwalunga : Officer

Cop : Va tutto bene? (Is everything alright?)

(Sky won't stop. I pinched her arm and she stopped)

Kwalunga : Tutto e perfetto (All is perfect)

Cop : Non e sicuro qui (It's not safe here)

Kwalunga : I'll go. Grazie (Thanks)

(I started my car and Sky laughed)

Kwalunga : What if my roof was removed and he found you sucking my dick?

(We laughed and I drove home)

Sky : It's a cabriolet baby and that is My dick not yours.

(We laughed)

(The following day at True Red)

Tina : Meloni was here

Kwalunga : And?

Anthony : She looked pale.

Tina : She said I must give you this.

(She handed me a brown envelope)

Kwalunga : What is this?

Tina : We don't know

(I opened it. It's an ultrasound picture. My heart started racing)

Kwalunga : She is pregnant.

(I had a grin on my face)

Tina : Really?

Kwalunga : Yeah.

(I kissed the picture)

Anthony : And what is that?

Kwalunga : What?

(There was a medical note and while I was reading it my phone rang.It was Meloni)

Kwalunga : Melo (I answered)

Meloni : I killed him. I killed your baby.

(My heart almost stopped)

Meloni : Don't look for me. I skipped the country and my boys will deal with your bitch.

(She hung up)

Anthony : Who was that?

(I ready the note and it confirmed that she went for an abortion.)

Kwalunga : She killed my baby. Fuck! That bitch killed my baby.

(I was losing it)

What?? (They asked in unison)

Kwalunga : I need some time alone.

Anthony : Lunga No!

(My body was sweating. I took off my gloves.
I was walking up and down)

Tina : Anthony bring him some water.

(Anthony raced out)

(I banged my desk with my fist and tears
were running down my face)

(Everything that happened in my past
attacked me. I kept hearing Manqoba's voice
in my mind "You are like a magnet for bad
luck". "Everything you touch turns into
disaster")

Kwalunga : Nooooooooo!!!! (I screamed covering
my ears with my hands)

(Thomas ran inside my office)

Thomas : Lunga! Lunga! Listen to me.

(I slowly went down on my knees)

Kwalunga : What have I done Father? Where did I go wrong?

(Tina hugged me with tears streaming down her face)

Tina : Lunga I'm sorry. I'm sorry. Ok?

(If my father saw me like this. He would kill me. I stood and put on my gloves)

Kwalunga : I need to go.

(Anthony looked at Thomas. I grabbed my keys and walked out. I needed some air)

(My phone rang bring him some water.

(Anthony raced out)

(I banged my desk with my fist and tears were running down my face)

(Everything that happened in my past attacked me. I kept hearing Mangoba's voice in my mind "You are like a magnet for bad luck". "Everything you touch turns into disaster")

Kwalunga : Noooooooo!!!! (I screamed covering my ears with my hands)

(Thomas ran inside my office)

Thomas : Lunga! Lunga! Listen to me.

(I slowly went down on my knees)

Kwalunga : What have I done Father? Where did I go wrong?

(Tina hugged me with tears streaming down her face)

Tina : Lunga I'm sorry. I'm sorry. Ok?

(If my father saw me like this. He would kill me. I stood and put on my gloves)

Kwalunga : I need to go.

(Anthony looked at Thomas. I grabbed my keys and walked out. I needed some air)

(My phone rang it was Sky)

Kwalunga : Sky?

(Silence)

Kwalunga : Sky!!!!

(She hung up . I remembered what Meloni said to me. "My boys will deal with your bitch")

Kwalunga : They took her. They took Sky. (I spoke to myself)

Chapter 33

(I raced to my car and drove straight home. When I arrived my door was open. I walked in)

Kwalunga : Sky!!! (I shouted)

(I felt something like a needle on my neck)

(I turned around and a man was standing there)

Kwalunga : Who the fuck are you?

Man : Il tuo peggior nemico (Your worst enemy)

(I was feeling dizzy and I had a blackout)

(I opened my eyes hours later. I tried to move but I couldn't because my hands were tied. My whole body was saturated with water and there was blood on the floor. I

tried to lift up my head but I was in pain. I heard Sky screaming)

Kwalunga : Sky (I muttered)

(A man was standing in front of me)

Man : Tu sei sveglio? (You are awake?)

Kwalunga : Futseg.

(He laughed)

(I'm not dying here without a fight. That I know)

Man : Voglio che tu veda qualcosa (I want you to see something)

(I didn't have the strength to talk. he lifted up my chin and everything was blurry. He laughed)

Man : Come here.

(He untied my hands and he helped me up. I took a few steps and I was on the floor. I had no energy)

Man : Bring her this side. He can't walk! (He shouted)

(I saw Sky walking in naked. My blood boiled. I closed my eyes)

Man : You open your eyes. (He kicked me)

Man : Nobody fuck with Meloni and get away with it.

(I groaned in pain)

Man : Fuck her Steve.

Sky : No!! Morgan please help me (She cried out loud)

(My body was sweating. I groaned louder and dug the floor with my hands. I forced my head up and the bastard was kissing Sky all over her neck. Steve held Sky's legs on his shoulder and he was fucking her.)

(I felt like something was leaving my body. It felt like I was flying or something. I was losing my mind. 2 men were in the house. I tightened my fists. I'm not losing another woman in my life. One bastard was busy with Sky and the other one was enjoying the show. His back was facing me so nobody was paying attention to me. One knee up. I forced

another one and I was up. There was no gun.
nothing. I wrapped my arm around his neck
and I squeezed my arm around his neck)

Kwalunga : Leave her or I kill him

Steve : What the....(He paused)

(He searched for something around)

Steve : Shit!

(Sky threw the first punch Steve was down.
He got up quickly and his hand was on Sky's
neck.He was strangling Sky)

(Steve laughed)

Steve : What you gonna do now?

Kwalunga : Fuck off!!!

(I regretted the day I fucked Meloni. I even hate my dick right now)

Kwalunga : Let her go!!! (I yelled)

(My energy was running out. What did they do to me?)

Bang! Bang! (Gunshots)

(Anthony and Tina stepped in)

Tina : Hands up!! (She shouted)

(Tina was a bad bitch holding her gun. Everything started looking blurry again I passed out)

(I woke up the next morning. My eyes were closed but I was awake. I heard Anthony's voice then Sky's. They were talking to someone else)

Anthony : Stara bene? (Is he going to be fine?)

Sky : Lo hanno drogato (They drugged him)

Anthony : Doctor is he going to make it or we must take him to hospital?

Doctor : I think he must go to the hospital.

(I opened my eyes)

Kwalunga : No ospedale (No hospital) baby come here.

(Sky started crying)

Sky : Morgan I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : Come here Sweetheart (I gave her my hand)

(She slept next to me with her hand on my chest)

Kwalunga : I will find those bastards (I whispered in her ear)

Anthony : Lunga are you sure that you are going to be fine?

Kwalunga : Where are they?

(He sighed)

Anthony : Arrested. They are being transferred to Rebibbia today.

Kwalunga : Doctor thank you. You may be excused.

Doctor : Mr Hela you ne...

Kwalunga : It's HLELA and no I don't need anything just go. (I cut him off)

Doctor : I gave him sedatives and they will kick in soon.He need to rest as much as possible.Telefonami se peggiora (Phone me if it gets worse)

Anthony : Ovviamente (Of course)

(Doctor walked out)

Kwalunga : I need to call Suffocate

(I tried to sit up but my body was in pain)

Sky : Baby please get some rest.

Kwalunga : No. I need to call your father.

Anthony : Why?

Kwalunga : Please excuse me. Both of you.

(They looked at each other)

Anthony : Sky. Come.

(They walked out and I dialed Suffocate's number)

Suffocate : Yeah.

Kwalunga : They raped Sky.

Suffocate : They did What?

Kwalunga : They are coming there. I want them dead.

Suffocate : They raped my daughter?

Kwalunga : Please take care of this for me.

(He is silent)

Kwalunga : If you can't please let me know and I will do it myself.

Suffocate : Consider it done.

Kwalunga : One of them is Steve.

(I hung up)

(I knew Meloni was behind all this. Was it worth it? Did I hurt her to a point where she wanted me to die?)

(Sky walked in)

Sky : Baby

(I'm trying so hard to forget what those bastards did to her and I blame myself for everything)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry Sky.

Sky : It's not your fault.

Kwalunga : It is. Nothing will ever work out for me. Everything I touch turns into a disaster and I'm scared that I will fuck up your life.

Sky : What are you saying Morgan?

Kwalunga : This will never work. Allow me to free you Sky while I still have a chance.

(She is crying)

Sky : No baby. No I'm not going anywhere.

Kwalunga : I don't want to lose you but I know I will if I don't let you go. I don't deserve you Sky. You don't deserve all this.

Sky : Morgan please.

Kwalunga : You almost died because of me. Those bastards forced themselves to you because of me. What's going to happen next?

(She quickly wiped her tears)

Sky : Baby please. I love you.

Kwalunga : I love you too Sweetheart but right now I don't have a choice. I need to let you go.

Sky : Morgan come here.

(Sky started crying)

Sky : Morgan I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : Come here Sweetheart (I gave her my hand)

(She slept next to me with her hand on my chest)

Kwalunga : I will find those bastards (I whispered in her ear)

Anthony : Lunga are you sure that you are going to be fine?

Kwalunga : Where are they?

(He sighed)

Anthony : Arrested. They are being transferred to Rebibbia today.

Kwalunga : Doctor thank you. You may be excused.

Doctor : Mr Hela you ne...

Kwalunga : It's HLELA and no I don't need anything just go. (I cut him off)

Doctor : I gave him sedatives and they will kick in soon.He need to rest as much as

possible. Telefonami se peggiora (Phone me if it gets worse)

Anthony : Ovviamente (Of course)

(Doctor walked out)

Kwalunga : I need to call Suffocate

(I tried to sit up but my body was in pain)

Sky : Baby please get some rest.

Kwalunga : No. I need to call your father.

Anthony : Why?

Kwalunga : Please excuse me. Both of you.

(They looked at each other)

Anthony : Sky. Come.

(They walked out and I dialed Suffocate's number)

Suffocate : Yeah.

Kwalunga : They raped Sky.

Suffocate : They did What?

Kwalunga : They are coming there. I want them dead.

Suffocate : They raped my daughter?

Kwalunga : Please take care of this for me.

(He is silent)

Kwalunga : If you can't please let me know and I will do it myself.

Suffocate : Consider it done.

Kwalunga : One of them is Steve.

(I hung up)

(I knew Meloni was behind all this. Was it worth it? Did I hurt her to a point where she wanted me to die?)

(Sky walked in)

Sky : Baby

(I'm trying so hard to forget what those bastards did to her and I blame myself for everything)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry Sky.

Sky : It's not your fault.

Kwalunga : It is. Nothing will ever work out for me. Everything I touch turns into a disaster and I'm scared that I will fuck up your life.

Sky : What are you saying Morgan?

Kwalunga : This will never work. Allow me to free you Sky while I still have a chance.

(She is crying)

Sky : No baby. No I'm not going anywhere.

Kwalunga : I don't want to lose you but I know I will if I don't let you go. I don't deserve you Sky. You don't deserve all this.

Sky : Morgan please.

Kwalunga : You almost died because of me. Those bastards forced themselves to you because of me. What's going to happen next?

(She quickly wiped her tears)

Sky : Baby please. I love you.

Kwalunga : I love you too Sweetheart but right now I don't have a choice. I need to let you go.

Sky : Morgan listen to me. We can do this my lo...

Kwalunga : No we can't. Please leave. (I cut her off)

Sky : No! (She snapped)

Kwalunga : I would never forgive myself if some...

(The sedatives kicked in. I'm falling asleep and I can't talk anymore. I slowly closed my eyes)

Chapter 34

(I'm not sure if this is a dream but my father walked in and stood next to me)

Mzwandile : All the answers that you are looking for are not here. Go back home Kwalunga.

(I wanted to hug him but he shook his head and walked out. I opened my eyes and looked around. Sky was sleeping next to me. She didn't go)

Kwalunga : Dammit! I was dreaming. (I said to myself)

Sky : Morgan are you ok? Should I call a doctor?

Kwalunga : No. No Sweetheart I'm fine. I just need to go home.

Sky : Home?

Kwalunga : Yes. Home in South Africa.

Sky : Why?

Kwalunga : I just had a dream and my f.... (I paused. She knows nothing about dreams)

Sky : And?

Kwalunga : Go back to sleep.

Sky : Are you going for good?

Kwalunga : For a few days.

Sky : I'm not going to leave you Morgan.

Kwalunga : I know Sweetheart.

(I wrapped my hand around her and kissed the top of her head)

Sky : I love you so much and please don't ask me to leave you.

Kwalunga : I won't.

(Maybe if I go back home I will be able to save myself. Us)

(2 WEEKS LATER)

(I was back to my old self and I went back to work.I couldn't stop thinking about the dream that I had)

Kwalunga : Thomas I need to go to South Africa for a few days.

Thomas : You've been through a lot and maybe some time away will be good for you.

Kwalunga : And I need to find Meloni.

Tina : No Lunga. Leave that woman alone and move on with your life.

Kwalunga : But she wanted to kill me and my girlfriend. I can't let her get away with that.

Anthony : And she didn't. If you go after her things might end up badly this time.

Thomas : Go home and forget about her.

Anthony : When are you planning to come back?

Kwalunga : I don't know

Sponsored

maybe in a few days or weeks.

Thomas : When are you going?

Kwalunga : Tomorrow morning. My flight is booked.

Anthony : Are you going with Sky?

Kwalunga : No.

Tina : She will die without you around (She laughed)

Kwalunga : I know.

(We all laughed)

Anthony : I'm going to miss you bro.

Kwalunga : I know and I will miss you too. All of you guys.

Thomas : Do you really have to go?

Kwalunga : Some time away will be good for me. You said it yourself Tommy

(They laughed)

Kwalunga : Anthony please keep me posted about new cases. If there's anything you need me to do. I'm a call away.

Anthony : Mrs Gasto wants to see you.

Kwalunga : Tell her I only fuck women from the age of 22 to 33.

(We all laughed. I'm so going to miss them)

(The following day at the Airport)

Kwalunga : I'm only going away for a few days
Sweetheart.

Sky : Weeks Morgan Weeks.

(I sigh)

Kwalunga : I will come back sooner than that.

Sky : I'm going to miss you baby.

Kwalunga : Come here.

(I kissed her lips)

Kwalunga : I need to go. I love you. Ok?

Sky : I love you more. Go baby

Daily New African Novels Download Here:



**eBooks
Cat**

WWW.eBooksDuck.Com

(She was crying)

(The last two people who said "Go" were my parents and after that I never saw them again. I felt nervous when Sky said that)

Kwalunga : Don't say that.

Sky : What?

Kwalunga : Never mind.

(I kissed her forehead)

Sky : Call me.

Kwalunga : I will. Take care of my car and my pussy.

(We laughed and I walked away)

Chapter 35

(I arrived Kwa Maphumulo)

Sthembele : I missed you bafo.

Kwalunga : You did?

Sthembele : Of course I did. Ungphatheleni?

Kwalunga : I bought you a brand new laptop.

(She hugged me. She was excited)

Kwalunga : Where is everybody else?

Sthembele : I don't know. I'm going to Johannesburg tomorrow.

(Why do I feel like she is changing the subject?)

Kwalunga : I know. Are you ready for Varsity life?

Sthembele : Yep. I'll be staying with Baba u Mthunzi. You heard that he got a job in Johannesburg?

Kwalunga : No

Sthembele : There is a lot you don't know about.

(She took a deep breath)

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

Sthembele : Nothing. I can't wait to go.

Kwalunga : Promise me that you will come back for the December holidays.

Sthembele : I want to spend them with you in Italy. Not here.

(Something is going on here)

Kwalunga : Are you ok?

Sthembele : Yes. why?

Kwalunga : Nothing

Sthembele : u Lwandile umithisile. He is going to be a father (She laughed)

Kwalunga : For real?

Sthembele : Yebo. His mother told my mom.

Kwalunga : umithise bani?

Sthembele : Pinky.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Pinky Mbuthe? The one who used to talk too much?

Sthembele : The one and only. She is carrying Lwandile's baby.

Kwalunga : I'm happy for him. He is lucky.

(Meloni killed mine)

Sthembele : Are you ok?

Kwalunga : Yeah sure. I need to go and check on Lwandile. It's been a while.

Sthembele : Why are you still wearing those gloves?

Kwalunga : Don't worry about it.

Sthembele : Please take them off Lunga. I want to see what you hiding.

Kwalunga : I need to go.

(I walked out. She is asking for the impossible)

(I went to see Lwandile and he was home alone)

Kwalunga : It's been a while bro. I know

Lwandile : Ey ndoda shit happened while you were gone.

Kwalunga : Yeah I heard about you and Pinky

Lwandile : Jah neh. I didn't see it coming.

Kwalunga : Congratulations man

Lwandile : Thanks bafo. How is Italy?

Kwalunga : A lot has happened in Italy bruh.

Lwandile : Oh yeah? Do you speak Italian?

Kwalunga : Ah come on bro (I laughed)

Lwandile : You must teach me.

(We laughed)

Lwandile : I never thought that I would see you again after what they did to your mother.

(I'm confused)

Kwalunga : Yeah?

Lwandile : Mangoba and his wife are devils. His wife lost her mind and they took her to Isangoma. Your mother is a fighter bro. She fought for herself even inside her grave.

(I don't know what he is talking about and he thinks that I know.)

Kwalunga : Tell me more.

Lwandile : My mother told them about Isangoma from u Mzinyathi and they took her there. Wesehlanya sure u maNcwane bro. She walked around naked and telling people how she and her husband burned your mother alive.

(I froze. My heart started racing)

Kwalunga : What?

Lwandile : Ngiyakutshela. Basithembile is no longer staying here Kwa Maphumulo. She moved to Richard's Bay with her baby daddy.

Kwalunga : Why?

Lwandile : They kicked her out when they found out that she was pregnant. It happened right after you went back to Italy.

(My blood is boiling and I'm trying to control myself. Lwandile thinks I know about who killed my mother and I didn't know. People are going to die today)

Kwalunga : Where is Mangoba and his wife?

Lwandile : You didn't find them home?

Kwalunga : No

Lwandile : I don't know maybe they went to u Mzinyathi.

Kwalunga : How is maNcwane now?

Lwandile : She is better but usalashwa.

Kwalunga : I see and where is Mthunzi's wife?

Lwandile : Your father and his wife moved to Johannesburg.

(I stood up and started pacing the room)

Kwalunga : Bafa abantu (I muttered)

Lwandile : Huh?

(I looked at him and faked a smile)

Kwalunga : Nothing.

Lwandile : Ey bruh. I'm sorry about Zinzi.

Kwalunga : It's ok. I'm glad she didn't get to see the man I've become. Ruthless (I whispered)

Lwandile : Yeah and I heard that you got arrested.

Kwalunga : I'm coming for everything.
Laduma izulu.

Lwandile : Lunga are you ok?

(He is confused)

Kwalunga : I am going to be ok. Trust me.

Lwandile : You are scaring me bro.

Kwalunga : You should be scared. (I had a grin on my face)

(I'm going out and I'm going out to kill)

Sponsored

(I arrived Kwa Maphumulo)

Sthembele : I missed you bafo.

Kwalunga : You did?

Sthembele : Of course I did. Ungphatheleni?

Kwalunga : I bought you a brand new laptop.

(She hugged me. She was excited)

Kwalunga : Where is everybody else?

Sthembele : I don't know. I'm going to Johannesburg tomorrow.

(Why do I feel like she is changing the subject?)

Kwalunga : I know. Are you ready for Varsity life?

Sthembele : Yep. I'll be staying with Baba u Mthunzi. You heard that he got a job in Johannesburg?

Kwalunga : No

Sthembele : There is a lot you don't know about.

(She took a deep breath)

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

Sthembele : Nothing. I can't wait to go.

Kwalunga : Promise me that you will come back for the December holidays.

Sthembele : I want to spend them with you in Italy. Not here.

(Something is going on here)

Kwalunga : Are you ok?

Sthembele : Yes. why?

Kwalunga : Nothing

Sthembele : u Lwandile umithisile. He is going to be a father (She laughed)

Kwalunga : For real?

Sthembele : Yebo. His mother told my mom.

Kwalunga : umithise bani?

Sthembele : Pinky.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Pinky Mbutu? The one who used to talk too much?

Sthembele : The one and only. She is carrying Lwandile's baby.

Kwalunga : I'm happy for him. He is lucky.

(Meloni killed mine)

Sthembele : Are you ok?

Kwalunga : Yeah sure. I need to go and check on Lwandile. It's been a while.

Sthembele : Why are you still wearing those gloves?

Kwalunga : Don't worry about it.

Sthembele : Please take them off Lunga. I want to see what you hiding.

Kwalunga : I need to go.

(I walked out. She is asking for the impossible)

(I went to see Lwandile and he was home alone)

Kwalunga : It's been a while bro. I know

Lwandile : Ey ndoda shit happened while you were gone.

Kwalunga : Yeah I heard about you and Pinky

Lwandile : Jah neh. I didn't see it coming.

Kwalunga : Congratulations man

Lwandile : Thanks bafo. How is Italy?

Kwalunga : A lot has happened in Italy bruh.

Lwandile : Oh yeah? Do you speak Italian?

Kwalunga : Ah come on bro (I laughed)

Lwandile : You must teach me.

(We laughed)

Lwandile : I never thought that I would see you again after what they did to your mother.

(I'm confused)

Kwalunga : Yeah?

Lwandile : Mangoba and his wife are devils. His wife lost her mind and they took her to Isangoma. Your mother is a fighter bro. She fought for herself even inside her grave.

(I don't know what he is talking about and he thinks that I know.)

Kwalunga : Tell me more.

Lwandile : My mother told them about Isangoma from u Mzinyathi and they took her there. Wesehlanya sure u maNcwane bro.

She walked around naked and telling people how she and her husband burned your mother alive.

(I froze. My heart started racing)

Kwalunga : What?

Lwandile : Ngiyakutshela. Basithembile is no longer staying here Kwa Maphumulo. She moved to Richard's Bay with her baby daddy.

Kwalunga : Why?

Lwandile : They kicked her out when they found out that she was pregnant. It happened right after you went back to Italy.

(My blood is boiling and I'm trying to control myself. Lwandile thinks I know about who

killed my mother and I didn't know. People are going to die today)

Kwalunga : Where is Manqoba and his wife?

Lwandile : You didn't find them home?

Kwalunga : No

Lwandile : I don't know maybe they went to u Mzinyathi.

Kwalunga : How is maNcwane now?

Lwandile : She is better but usalashwa.

Kwalunga : I see and where is Mthunzi's wife?

Lwandile : Your father and his wife moved to Johannesburg.

(I stood up and started pacing the room)

Kwalunga : Bafa abantu (I muttered)

Lwandile : Huh?

(I looked at him and faked a smile)

Kwalunga : Nothing.

Lwandile : Ey bruh. I'm sorry about Zinzi.

Kwalunga : It's ok. I'm glad she didn't get to see the man I've become. Ruthless (I whispered)

Lwandile : Yeah and I heard that you got arrested.

Kwalunga : I'm coming for everything.
Laduma izulu.

Lwandile : Lunga are you ok?

(He is confused)

Kwalunga : I am going to be ok. Trust me.

Lwandile : You are scaring me bro.

Kwalunga : You should be scared. (I had a grin
on my face)

(I'm going out and I'm going out to kill)

Chapter 36

(Lwandile begged me to sleep over. He was scared of what I might do. He has no idea what is coming. I couldn't sleep a wink last night. I was tossing and turning)

Kwalunga : May I use your car?

(He is staring at me)

Lwandile : Where do you want to go?

Kwalunga : Shopping Center. I need to buy a few things for Sthembele before she leaves.

Lwandile : What time is she leaving?

Kwalunga : I don't know. Late.

Lwandile : Kwalunga uyangithusa mina ndoda.

Kwalunga : I told you that I'm not planning on doing anything. Drop it.

(I fixed my gloves)

Lwandile : What happened to your hands?

Kwalunga : Give me your car keys.

(He shook his head and handed me his car keys. He drives a red Velocity Golf.)

Lwandile : Let me come with you.

Kwalunga : No.

(I walked out)

(I drove home and Manqoba and his wife were home. Sthembele was busy packing)

Manqoba : Ufike nini wena?

(I was just staring at him. Only the worst is running through my mind.)

Sthembele : He arrived last night.

(maNcwane was busy scratching her head non stop. She is really crazy)

Kwalunga : What's wrong with her?

(I pointed at her using my head)

Manqoba : That's non of your fuckin business.

(I chuckled)

Sthembele : You don't want to know Lunga. Trust me.

(I already know sister)

Kwalunga : Yeah. Are you taking the flight?

Sthembele : No. Bus

Kwalunga : Why didn't you tell me to book a flight for you?

Sthembele : Don't worry about me. I will be fine. When are you going back to Italy?

Kwalunga : Soon.

Sthembele : This place is not good for you.

(She looked at her father then her mother)

(I looked at maNcwane. It's like she doesn't even know that I'm here)

Kwalunga : maNcwane how are you?

Manqoba : Leave my wife alone. Get out!

maNcwane : The ashes Manqoba. I want the ashes.

(She is scratching herself with her eyes wide open. I laughed)

Manqoba : You think this is funny Kwalunga? You think this is fuckin funny?

Kwalunga : I don't know. You tell me.

Manqoba : Get out!!! (He yelled)

Sthembele : Oh please Baba. Just stop. Don't you think it's enough? After everything you and Mah did to Lunga?

(I know exactly what she is talking about)

Manqoba : Shut up!!! (He shouted)

Sthembele : I hope you burn in hell. I'm ashamed to call you my father.

(She walked closer to her mother)

Sthembele : And you? (She pointed at her)
You deserve more than this. I hop....

Manqoba : Sthembele get out!!!!

(She pushed her out and Sthembele laughed)

Sthembele : Don't worry about me Baba. I'm going and you will never see me again.

(This is interesting to watch)

(Sthembele walked out)

Manqoba : You. Follow her. This is not your home and it will never be your home. Get the fuck out of my face. Fuseg!!!!

Kwalunga : You right. My home was burned down with my mother inside so Yeah this is not my home.

Manqoba : She deserved it. Get out!!!

(I wanted to strangle him to death but No. That is an easy way to die. I walked out and Sthembele was crying outside)

Kwalunga : Sthe Uzokwenzenjani?

Sthembele : I'll go and stay with Phumi for a few hours until my bus arrives.

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

Sthembele : Yes. Kwalunga I'm sorry bhuti wami. I'm sorry

(I hugged and she was sobbing)

Kwalunga : I will take care of this.

Sthembele : I wish I could tell you everything but I can't.

(I know everything and I will handle everything the best way I know how)

Kwalunga : I'll take you to your friend's place. Get your bags.

(She smiled and wiped her tears)

Sthembele : Is that Lwandile's car?

(I nod)

Sponsored

(Lwandile begged me to sleep over. He was scared of what I might do. He has no idea what is coming. I couldn't sleep a wink last night. I was tossing and turning)

Kwalunga : May I use your car?

(He is staring at me)

Lwandile : Where do you want to go?

Kwalunga : Shopping Center. I need to buy a few things for Sthembele before she leaves.

Lwandile : What time is she leaving?

Kwalunga : I don't know. Late.

Lwandile : Kwalunga uyangithusa mina ndoda.

Kwalunga : I told you that I'm not planning on doing anything. Drop it.

(I fixed my gloves)

Lwandile : What happened to your hands?

Kwalunga : Give me your car keys.

(He shook his head and handed me his car keys. He drives a red Velocity Golf.)

Lwandile : Let me come with you.

Kwalunga : No.

(I walked out)

(I drove home and Manqoba and his wife were home. Sthembele was busy packing)

Manqoba : Ufike nini wena?

(I was just staring at him. Only the worst is running through my mind.)

Sthembele : He arrived last night.

(maNcwane was busy scratching her head non stop. She is really crazy)

Kwalunga : What's wrong with her?

(I pointed at her using my head)

Manqoba : That's non of your fuckin business.

(I chuckled)

Sthembele : You don't want to know Lunga. Trust me.

(I already know sister)

Kwalunga : Yeah. Are you taking the flight?

Sthembele : No. Bus

Kwalunga : Why didn't you tell me to book a flight for you?

Sthembele : Don't worry about me. I will be fine. When are you going back to Italy?

Kwalunga : Soon.

Sthembele : This place is not good for you.

(She looked at her father then her mother)

(I looked at maNcwane. It's like she doesn't even know that I'm here)

Kwalunga : maNcwane how are you?

Manqoba : Leave my wife alone. Get out!

maNcwane : The ashes Manqoba. I want the ashes.

(She is scratching herself with her eyes wide open. I laughed)

Manqoba : You think this is funny Kwalunga?
You think this is fuckin funny?

Kwalunga : I don't know. You tell me.

Manqoba : Get out!!! (He yelled)

Sthembele : Oh please Baba. Just stop. Don't you think it's enough? After everything you and Mah did to Lunga?

(I know exactly what she is talking about)

Manqoba : Shut up!!! (He shouted)

Sthembele : I hope you burn in hell. I'm ashamed to call you my father.

(She walked closer to her mother)

Sthembele : And you? (She pointed at her)
You deserve more than this. I hop....

Manqoba : Sthembele get out!!!!

(She pushed her out and Sthembele laughed)

Sthembele : Don't worry about me Baba. I'm going and you will never see me again.

(This is interesting to watch)

(Sthembele walked out)

Manqoba : You. Follow her. This is not your home and it will never be your home. Get the fuck out of my face. Fuseg!!!!

Kwalunga : You right. My home was burned down with my mother inside so Yeah this is not my home.

Manqoba : She deserved it. Get out!!!

(I wanted to strangle him to death but No.
That is an easy way to die. I walked out and
Sthembele was crying outside)

Kwalunga : Sthe Uzokwenzenjani?

Sthembele : I'll go and stay with Phumi for a
few hours until my bus arrives.

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

Sthembele : Yes. Kwalunga I'm sorry bhuti
wami. I'm sorry

(I hugged and she was sobbing)

Kwalunga : I will take care of this.

Sthembele : I wish I could tell you
everything but I can't.

(I know everything and I will handle everything the best way I know how)

Kwalunga : I'll take you to your friend's place. Get your bags.

(She smiled and wiped her tears)

Sthembele : Is that Lwandile's car?

(I nod)

Chapter 37

(After I dropped off Sthembele I went to buy steel nails and petrol and I drove to our church. Lwandile called me)

Kwalunga : I will bring your car.

(That is the first thing I said when I answered his call)

Lwandile : Forget about the car. I'm worried about you Kwalunga.

Kwalunga : I'm fine. I'm taking Sthe to the airport (I lied)

Lwandile : Oh ok. That's good

Kwalunga : Is there anything else?

Lwandile : No.

(I hung up and walked inside the church. It was always open)

(St Paul Catholic Church. My mother used to love it here and I remembered how she used to beg me to come with her.)

(I stayed in the church until it was dark. The whole time I was just staring at the walls doing nothing.)

Kwalunga : Father show me the way and if you can't show me the way then forgive me for my sins that I'm about to commit.

(I paused and looked around like I was expecting a sign or something)

Kwalunga : Nel nome del Padre del Figlio e dello Spirito Santo. Amen (In the name of the Father the Son and the Holy spirit)

(I made the sign of the cross and walked out)

Kwalunga : Shit is about to go down (I said to myself while walking out of the church)

(I took Lwandile's car back to his home and I parked it outside the gate and I took my stuff and got out of the car. I walked back home)

(I arrived home. Only maNcwane was home and she was sleeping in her room)

Kwalunga : Where is Manqoba?

maNcwane : Who are you?

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : No worries Mah. I will remind you.

(I walked out and searched for Manqoba but he was nowhere. The kraal was empty and I

knew he was at Ngudwini. I took my steel nails and a rope. I headed down to the bush.)

(He was busy smoking. I stood behind him and looked around)

Kwalunga : Skeif

(He froze when he realized it was me)

Manqoba : What do you want from me?

Kwalunga : I don't know. Vengeance?

(I grabbed him by his arms)

Manqoba : What are you doing Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : You'll see.

(I tied him up to a tree. I took out steel nails)

Manqoba : Uyangibulala Kwangula?

(His breathing grew louder)

Kwalunga : Who killed my mother Manqoba?

Manqoba : I don't know what you are talking about.

(His axe was sticking in a tree. Excactly what I needed)

Kwalunga : But you do know that I am going to kill you. right?

Manqoba : Unesono. Ubulala uyihlo?

Kwalunga : Yes and I will crucify you for my sins

(I took his axe and I stood in front of him)

Kwalunga : Who killed my mother?

Mangoba : It was me and I don't regret it because she was a bitch who deserved to die. You know what I regret? That you didn't burn with her inside that house

(I clenched my Jaws. I felt tears running down my face. I took a steel nail and I nailed his hand to the tree. He screamed as blood ran down his arm)

(I groaned and took his other hand. I looked at him into his eyes and my blood boiled. I placed the steel nail in a center of his hand. I

fixed an axe in my hand and both his hands were nailed to the tree. He screamed louder)

Kwalunga : You made a biggest mistake in your life by killing my mother. You fucked up my life.

Manqoba : Fakof!!!!

(He groaned like a devil that he was.)

Kwalunga : I'm going home to kill your wife. I'm going to kill her the same way you and her killed my mother.

Manqoba : Kwalunga No. No please don't leave me here. Please don't kill my wife please.

Kwalunga : Don't worry I will come back. Don't miss me too much.

Manqoba : No!!!!!!!!!!!!!! (He screamed)

Sponsored

(After I dropped off Sthembele I went to buy steel nails and petrol and I drove to our church. Lwandile called me)

Kwalunga : I will bring your car.

(That is the first thing I said when I answered his call)

Lwandile : Forget about the car. I'm worried about you Kwalunga.

Kwalunga : I'm fine. I'm taking Sthe to the airport (I lied)

Lwandile : Oh ok. That's good

Kwalunga : Is there anything else?

Lwandile : No.

(I hung up and walked inside the church. It was always open)

(St Paul Catholic Church. My mother used to love it here and I remembered how she used to beg me to come with her.)

(I stayed in the church until it was dark. The whole time I was just staring at the walls doing nothing.)

Kwalunga : Father show me the way and if you can't show me the way then forgive me for my sins that I'm about to commit.

(I paused and looked around like I was expecting a sign or something)

Kwalunga : Nel nome del Padre del Figlio e dello Spirito Santo. Amen (In the name of the Father the Son and the Holy spirit)

(I made the sign of the cross and walked out)

Kwalunga : Shit is about to go down (I said to myself while walking out of the church)

(I took Lwandile's car back to his home and I parked it outside the gate and I took my stuff and got out of the car. I walked back home)

(I arrived home. Only maNcwane was home and she was sleeping in her room)

Kwalunga : Where is Manqoba?

maNcwane : Who are you?

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : No worries Mah. I will remind you.

(I walked out and searched for Manqoba but he was nowhere. The kraal was empty and I knew he was at Ngudwini. I took my steel nails and a rope. I headed down to the bush.)

(He was busy smoking. I stood behind him and looked around)

Kwalunga : Skeif

(He froze when he realized it was me)

Manqoba : What do you want from me?

Kwalunga : I don't know. Vengeance?

(I grabbed him by his arms)

Manqoba : What are you doing Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : You'll see.

(I tied him up to a tree. I took out steel nails)

Manqoba : Uyangibulala Kwangula?

(His breathing grew louder)

Kwalunga : Who killed my mother Manqoba?

Manqoba : I don't know what you are talking about.

(His axe was sticking in a tree. Excatly what I needed)

Kwalunga : But you do know that I am going to kill you. right?

Manqoba : Unesono. Ubulala uyihlo?

Kwalunga : Yes and I will crucify you for my sins

(I took his axe and I stood in front of him)

Kwalunga : Who killed my mother?

Manqoba : It was me and I don't regret it because she was a bitch who deserved to die.

You know what I regret? That you didn't burn with her inside that house

(I clenched my Jaws. I felt tears running down my face. I took a steel nail and I nailed his hand to the tree. He screamed as blood ran down his arm)

(I groaned and took his other hand. I looked at him into his eyes and my blood boiled. I placed the steel nail in a center of his hand. I fixed an axe in my hand and both his hands were nailed to the tree.He screamed louder)

Kwalunga : You made a biggest mistake in your life by killing my mother. You fucked up my life.

Manqoba : Fakof!!!!

(He groaned like a devil that he was.)

Kwalunga : I'm going home to kill your wife. I'm going to kill her the same way you and her killed my mother.

Manqoba : Kwalunga No. No please don't leave me here. Please don't kill my wife please.

Kwalunga : Don't worry I will come back. Don't miss me too much.

Manqoba : No!!!!!!!!!!!!!! (He screamed)

Chapter 38

(I walked away while he continued screaming. I got home and went straight to my father's room. My hands were covered in blood.

Manqoba's blood so I washed my hands and I packed my backpack. I fixed the shoulder straps around my shoulders while I looked around the house. I will never see this house again)

(I stepped inside maNcwane's room and my petrol was still behind the door)

Kwalunga : I'm back

(She laughed out loud. She is crazy for real)

maNcwane : Can you smell the ashes?

(She inhaled with her eyes wide open)

Kwalunga : You killed my mother.

(She laughed)

maNcwane : She wanted to take Mangoba from me. I killed her. I killed her

(She kept saying and she laughed. My body vibrated. I swallowed a lump in my throat)

Kwalunga : You looked at me straight into my eyes knowing very well that you killed my mother. The least that you could have done for me was to protect me. I needed a mother. I needed a family Mah. I wanted to go to school. I needed someone to protect me from myself and I wanted to stay here with Zi.... (I paused and fought back my tears)

(I opened the petrol and I poured it all around the room. I held the door on my way out and looked at her one more time before I set the house on fire.)

(She screamed and I ran back down to Manqoba. The moon shined brightly. The dogs were barking and howling. I knew they were barking at Manqoba who was still screaming and yelling)

(The dogs ran away. I was confused)

Manqoba : Nayi inyoka sizani!!!!!! (He yelled)

(I stopped and I took steps back slowly. I flinched my eyes and I saw it. The biggest Snake I ever saw was making it way to Manqoba. I stood still)

Manqoba : No!! No!! Go away (He screamed)

(This is the same Snake that killed Jojo years ago.)

(I wanted to help him but suddenly there was silence. It was too late. Tears were streaming down my face and I thought of my mother. I imagined her screaming inside a burning house without help and I wiped away my tears and I ran back. I stood on top of a hillock and looked around. People were outside my home and the fire was still there. I looked at Zinzi's home)

Kwalunga : My work here is done (I said to myself)

(I took out my phone. There were several missed calls from Lwandile and Sthembele. I placed my phone on my ear)

Kwalunga : Caldo. Ho bisogno di te (I need you)

Anthony : Cosa hai fatto? (Wha did you do?)

Kwalunga : Li ho uccisi io (I killed them)

(I hung up and watched the house burn to ashes)

Kwalunga : Cenere alla Cenere (Ashes to Ashes)

(I whispered)

Sponsored

(I walked away while he continued screaming. I got home and went straight to my father's room. My hands were covered in blood.

Manqoba's blood so I washed my hands and I packed my backpack. I fixed the shoulder straps around my shoulders while I looked

around the house. I will never see this house again)

(I stepped inside maNcwane's room and my petrol was still behind the door)

Kwalunga : I'm back

(She laughed out loud. She is crazy for real)

maNcwane : Can you smell the ashes?

(She inhaled with her eyes wide open)

Kwalunga : You killed my mother.

(She laughed)

maNcwane : She wanted to take Manqoba from me. I killed her. I killed her

(She kept saying and she laughed. My body vibrated. I swallowed a lump in my throat)

Kwalunga : You looked at me straight into my eyes knowing very well that you killed my mother. The least that you could have done for me was to protect me. I needed a mother. I needed a family Mah. I wanted to go to school. I needed someone to protect me from myself and I wanted to stay here with Zi.... (I paused and fought back my tears)

(I opened the petrol and I poured it all around the room. I held the door on my way out and looked at her one more time before I set the house on fire.)

(She screamed and I ran back down to Mangoba. The moon shined brightly. The dogs were barking and howling. I knew they were

barking at Manqoba who was still screaming and yelling)

(The dogs ran away. I was confused)

Manqoba : Nayi inyoka sizani!!!!!! (He yelled)

(I stopped and I took steps back slowly. I flinched my eyes and I saw it. The biggest Snake I ever saw was making it way to Manqoba. I stood still)

Manqoba : No!! No!! Go away (He screamed)

(This is the same Snake that killed Jojo years ago.)

(I wanted to help him but suddenly there was silence. It was too late. Tears were streaming down my face and I thought of my mother. I imagined her screaming inside a

burning house without help and I wiped away my tears and I ran back. I stood on top of a hillock and looked around. People were outside my home and the fire was still there. I looked at Zinzi's home)

Kwalunga : My work here is done (I said to myself)

(I took out my phone. There were several missed calls from Lwandile and Sthembele. I placed my phone on my ear)

Kwalunga : Caldo. Ho bisogno di te (I need you)

Anthony : Cosa hai fatto? (Wha did you do?)

Kwalunga : Li ho uccisi io (I killed them)

(I hung up and watched the house burn to ashes)

Kwalunga : Cenere alla Cenere (Ashes to Ashes)

(I whispered)

Daily New African Novels Download Here:



**eBooks
Cat**

WWW.eBooksDuck.Com

Chapter 39

2 MONTHS LATER

(I did what I had to do. What I did was inhumane but I finally found closure. My parents can finally rest in peace. Sthembele called me countless times after I left South Africa and I knew she wanted to tell me about the death of Mangoba and maNcwane so I didn't take her calls and there was no way I could attend their funeral if there was even a funeral. I created a fake Facebook account to keep track of Sthembele and I was happy that she managed to register at UJ. That was the only thing she posted about.)

(My life was back to normal. I was with the woman that I love Sky and I went back to work. Only Anthony knew about what I did back home.)

Kwalunga : I want to propose to Sky

Anthony : Are you serious?

Kwalunga : Yeah man. It's about time.

(He was excited)

Anthony : Lunga you've been through shit bro and if there is one person who deserves happiness it's you.

(I sigh)

Kwalunga : I want to propose to her tomorrow.

Anthony : Tomorrow is the 1st of November.

Kwalunga : And?

Anthony : It's All Saints Day

Kwalunga : Are we going to celebrate that again this year?

(He laughed)

Anthony : We do it every year bro.

Kwalunga : Yeah right. (I rolled my eyes)
Yeah man I will propose tomorrow. Why not?

Anthony : Do it.

Kwalunga : I don't know how I will do it though.

Anthony : Well I know and I'll help you.

Kwalunga : I hope it's not one of your crazy Ideas.

(We laughed)

Anthony : It isn't. Well it depends on what looks like a crazy idea to you.

Kwalunga : I want it to be simple.

Anthony : I know exactly what you mean. I'm done here and you are giving me a lift to my house.

Kwalunga : What happened to your car?

Anthony : Nicola crashed it. It's a long story so let's go.

Kwalunga : But I'm not done working.

Anthony : Take your home.

Kwalunga : Home? Do you think I can get any work done with my girlfriend around?

(He laughed)

Anthony : I don't think so.

Kwalunga : Exactly. Take my car and I will call a cab.

Anthony : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : I'm sure. My house is 45 minutes away from here and yours is 3 days away.

(We laughed)

Anthony : That's because you drive like a maniac and you think that your house is 45 minutes away which is not true but Thanks man

Kwalunga : I have a few conditions though.

Anthony : Do I need a pen and a paper to take them down? (He laughed)

Kwalunga : No fucking in my car. No eating in my car and No Nicola near my car. Got it?

Anthony : I don't know about fucking hey (He scratched his hair)

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Get out of here.

(I gave him my keys)

Anthony : Thomas has left and only Tina is still here but I left her packing. Don't stay till late (He said while walking out)

(The following day)

Sky : My father called.

Kwalunga : Oh yeah?

Sky : Yes baby. He said he misses us.

Kwalunga : Us? Did you tell him about us?

Sky : No hell no (She laughed)

(I sighed in relief)

Kwalunga : I value my life Sweetheart.

(She laughed)

Sky : I was hoping that we could give him a visit today.

Kwalunga : No Sweetheart. Today I'm going to church.

(She is shocked)

Sky : Morgan are you dying?

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : No Sweetheart. Why?

Sky : You never go to church.

Kwalunga : I know but on this day we do go to church. Thomas

Sponsored

Anthony and I. Do you want to come with us?

Sky : No thanks. I will cook for us and you can bring them over after church.

Kwalunga : Thank you Sweetheart.

(I kissed her neck while undressing her and she stopped me.)

Sky : It's that time of the month

Kwalunga : Oh we are sick today?

(She laughed)

Sky : Yes my love.

Kwalunga : Do you need anything?

Sky : No baby. Thanks.

(My phone rang and it was Thomas)

Kwalunga : Yes Thomas

Thomas : We've been waiting for almost 10 minutes. Where are you?

Kwalunga : I'm in my bed with my woman.

Thomas : What about church?

(I glance at the clock)

Kwalunga : Krane did you see the time?

Thomas : Yes and we are already late for church.

Kwalunga : Fine. Give me 10 more minutes.

(I hung up and I know he is pissed off)

(We went to church and nothing was done there. We just took some statue and walked

around with it all over Rome until my feet couldn't take it anymore)

Kwalunga : Last year we were done by this time. (I whispered to Anthony)

Anthony : I know and I'm hungry now.

Kwalunga : I'm sure this statue is also tired of walking now.

(Anthony laughed)

Anthony : Lunga it's a Saint icon

Kwalunga : Whatever it is. What is your plan about my proposal to Sky?

Anthony : The plate is inside your car

Kwalunga : The plate?

Anthony : Yes. You will use it to propose.

(I knew Anthony would come up with a crazy idea)

Kwalunga : How am I going to ask Sky to marry me with a plate?

Anthony : Don't worry about it. I will explain to you as soon as we are done here. You bought the ring?

Kwalunga : I will give her Zinzi's.

Anthony : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : Yes.

Anthony : If you say so.

Kwalunga : If we don't go back now I swear I will leave you guys right here.

(Anthony laughed)

Anthony : Tell me when you decide to go.

(We laughed)

(Finally we were done and we took the statue back to church. Oh Anthony said it's not a statue but it's Saint Icon.)

Chapter 40

(We went back to my house. Only Anthony joined us for lunch and Thomas had to rush home because his parents were there. They take this Saint Day way too seriously)

(We ate and talked till late and Anthony asked to speak to me in private. We went to the kitchen)

Anthony : Where is the ring?

Kwalunga : Here. In my pocket

Anthony : Good. You see these two plates in my hands? This one's for Sky and this one is yours. I'm going to put snacks here and when she is done with her snacks she will see this.

(This is beautiful. Her plate read "Will you marry me Sky?. Anthony is not that bad after all)

Kwalunga : I love this man. Thank you so much.

Anthony : You are nothing without me and you know it. Now go and sit down. I will bring the snacks.

(I walked back and sat down)

Sky : Why are you guys having secret meetings?

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Come on Sweetheart. We were just talking about work.

(Anthony walked over to us and served us snacks)

Sky : Thank you Anthony. I think you should move in with us.

Kwalunga : I see enough of him at the office.
Thank you very much.

(We laughed and Sky started eating. I was so nervous)

Anthony : I need to get going now my girlfriend is waiting for me. Lunga good luck
Sponsored

man.

(He winked at me and walked out)

Sky : Bye Anthony. He is so sweet baby.

Kwalunga : I'm jealous.

(She laughed and suddenly her face changed. She flinched her eyes looking at her plate and my heart started racing. This is it)

Sky : What is th....(She quickly emptied her snacks in a bowl and her eyes were wide open)

(I was on my knee with a ring in my hands)

Kwalunga : Sky Das my life is nothing without you. Marry me Sweetheart.

(She jumped up and down with excitement)

Sky : Yes Yes Yes. Yes Morgan I will marry you my love.

(I put the ring on her finger and it felt like a dream)

Sky : This is....

Kwalunga : Zinzi's ring. I know my love and Nobody deserves to wear it more than you.

(She smiled)

(I slowly took off my gloves and she was stunned)

Kwalunga : Today is a new day and I want to show you all of me. These are my hands. I had the most beautiful hands but Chelsea Cameron took that away from me in prison. He burned my hands with boiling water and he added acid that left my hands looking like this.

(She started crying and caressed my hands)

Kwalunga : I will never be able to look at these hands for over 5 minutes so allow me to use these gloves my love but I want you to

know what's underneath them before you allow me.

(She pressed her lips to each of my hands)

Sky : I love you Lunga.

(Finally she said my name. No more Morgan)

Kwalunga : I love you Sky and I love you so much.

(I kissed her lips down to her neck. I wanted her so much)

Sky : There is blood down there. (She laughed)

(Oh fuck these periods)

Kwalunga : Let me hold you in my arms for the whole night.

Sky : Hold me for the rest of my life.

(Getting arrested was somehow a blessing in disguise. I always wondered if maybe I didn't get arrested would Sky be here with me?)

(I was about to pick her up in my arms when we heard a knock on the door)

Kwalunga : I'll get that.

(I went to open the door and a woman was standing there.)

Woman : Xin chao

(What is she saying?)

Kwalunga : May I help you?

(She sighs)

Woman : Toi dang tim kiem Sky

(What on earth is she speaking?)

Kwalunga : You are looking for Sky?

Woman : Uh! Uh

Kwalunga : Baby someone is looking for you here.

(I was so confused)

Kwalunga : Please come in.

(We stepped in)

Sky : Madre (Mother)

(Oh this is Selina Das. The woman who woke up from the dead)

Selina : Con gai toi (My daughter)

(This is not Italian. She moved to Vietnam and I'm sure this Vietnamese. Sky taught me a bit of it)

Sky : Voi parlare Vietnamese? (You speak Vietnamese?)

Selina : Toi da co (I had to)

Sky : Italian?

Selina : Un po (A little)

(She shrugged and Sky rolled her eyes)

Sky : It's going to be a long night.

(Sky doesn't seem happy to see her mother.
We sat down)

Sky : Baby this is my mother Selina. Madre.
Lunga Vi hon phu cua toi (Mother. Lunga my
fiance)

(Music to my ears)

Selina : Xin chao Lunga (Hello Lunga)

(Italian is better than this)

Kwalunga : Sawubona

(I might as well just speak my language)

(They laughed. I don't understand how is that funny)

Sky : Baby don't do that to us. My mother doesn't understand English my love and she doesn't remember how to speak Italian so I have to speak this thing. Trust me I hate this too (She rolled her eyes)

(Now I understand)

Kwalunga : It's Ok sweetheart

Selina : Toi tich ahn ay Sky (I like him Sky)

Sky : Toi hieu roi. Tai sao ban o day? (I see. Why are you here?)

(Sky is one jealous woman. I wanted to laugh)

Selina : Mi se macanto (I missed you)

Sky : Neu ho nhin thay ban thi sao? (What if they saw you)

Selina : Khong. Toi chac chan (No. I made sure)

(Selina looked at me and I guess they needed some privacy.)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart please prepare your mother something to eat .

Sky : Khong. Co ay on (No. She is fine)

(That was awkward. My phone rang. Thank God)

Kwalunga : Please excuse me. I need to take this.

Sky : It's ok baby.

(I went upstairs)

Kwalunga : Anthony

Anthony : How did it go?

Kwalunga : Very well and Thank you so much bro.

Anthony : It's nothing man. Don't sweat it.

Kwalunga : Her mother is here.

Anthony : For real?

Kwalunga : Yep and they are speaking vietnamese.

(Anthony laughed)

Anthony : Do you want to come here?

Kwalunga : No man. I don't want to take your space. I know Nicola is there

Anthony : She is not here. Come. We are having beers and Thomas is here.

(He hung up. I took my car keys and went downstairs)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart. May I have a moment with you?

Sky : Yes baby. What's up?

(She pecked my lips)

Kwalunga : I think I should go and stay with the boys for a couple of hours.

(She sighs)

Sky : It's already late.

Kwalunga : I'll come back tomorrow then.

(She shook her head)

Sky : No no no. I don't want you to go.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart. Look at me.

(I lifted her chin)

Kwalunga : Your mother needs some time with you and I will give her that. Please be easy on her.

Sky : Ok fine. It's only the boys. Right?

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart.I'll never do that to you ever again.

Sky : Ok. I love you.

(I kissed her forehead)

Kwalunga : Love you more.

(She went back to her mother and I walked out)

Daily New African Novels Download Here:

WWW.eBooksDuck.Com



**eBooks
Cat**

Chapter 41

(I arrived at Anthony's house and Thomas and some other guy were there. The guy looked like Thomas but he was younger than him. They were drinking)

Anthony : Xin chao (He laughed)

Kwalunga : Fuck off Anthony.

(We laughed. I grabbed a beer and sat down)

Thomas : This my brother Lunga. Ademaro Krane

Kwalunga : Ademaro Hi. I didn't know you had a brother.

Thomas : I do and a sister too.

Ademaro : We are in Venice with our parents.

Kwalunga : Oh ok and where is the sister?

(I winked at Thomas and Ademaro laughed)

Thomas : You are someone's fiance Lunga.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Jeez bro. I'm just asking. Chill

(We all laughed)

Thomas : How is the ghost?

Kwalunga : What ghost?

Thomas : Tua suocera (Your mother in law)
.Didn't she die? (He laughed)

(These guys are crazy)

Kwalunga : The ghost seemed fine to me. It
was speaking vietnamese.

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : I'm sleeping over Anthony.

Thomas : All of us are sleeping over.

Kwalunga : You left your parents at your
house?

Thomas : I did. They are busy asking me
about kids.

Ademaro : Thomas you are not getting any younger. You need one.

Thomas : Forget it bro.

Anthony : I want one.

Kwalunga : With Nicola?

(A woman walked in and went straight to Anthony)

Woman : Babe (She kissed Anthony)

(Anthony is cheating?)

Anthony : Guys I will see you later. Thomas You know where to find me as soon as she gets here.

Kwalunga : Anthony what's going on here?

Anthony : Booty calls Lunga.

(He ran upstairs following the woman)

Kwalunga : What the fuck is he talking about?

Thomas : Where the fuck is Tina? I need some pussy now.

(What the fuck is wrong with these guys?)

Ademaro : Lunga these guys will drive you crazy.

(Tina walked in)

Thomas : About damn time. Follow me Tina.

Tina : Hi Lunga. Ademaro you good?

(She followed Thomas upstairs)

(I looked at Ademaro and he laughed)

Kwalunga : Where are we going to sleep?
Because I'm sure Thomas and Tina are going
to my room.

Ademaro : Anthony told me that you used to
stay with him. Don't worry. The guest room
and your room are safe.

Kwalunga : How?

Ademaro : Come. I'll show you.

(We ran upstairs and Tina and this other
woman were speaking in tongues. Screaming
with pleasure)

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Are they all here?

Ademaro : Open that door and see for yourself

Kwalunga : No.

(Ademaro opened the bedroom door and Thomas was fucking Tina in Anthony's bed and Anthony was on the floor with that woman who I had never seen before.)

(I shook my head and laughed)

Thomas : Close that door Ademaro!!! (He yelled)

(Ademaro closed the door and we went back downstairs)

Kwalunga : You Italians are crazy. I'd never do that.

Ademaro : I am Italian but I'd never do that.

(We laughed. I don't even know what to say to Ademaro. I don't know him)

Kwalunga : So how is Venice?

Ademaro : Fucked up.

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

(He is silent)

Ademaro : I should have stayed with Thomas and continued working at True Red if I knew shit would turn out like this.

(His phone rang. He ignored it)

Kwalunga : Ademaro are you in trouble?

Ademaro : Too deep and I don't know how to get out.

Kwalunga : Yeah?

(His phone rang again and he switched it off)

Kwalunga : You can talk to me and maybe I can help.

(He shook his head and cracked his fingers)

Ademaro : Death is my only way out of this.

(This is serious)

Kwalunga : Ademaro listen to me. Thomas is like a brother to me and that goes for you too. Tell me what the fuck is going on here?

(He started crying)

Ademaro : I can't go to jail Lunga. I'm only 19 years old. I can't.

(He is way younger than Thomas. Thomas 36. Anthony is 29 and Tina is 27)

Kwalunga : Hey. Hey come on talk to me.

(He wiped his tears and looked around)

Kwalunga : Let's go to the porch.

(We stepped out and it was already dark. Ademaro took out a pack of cigarettes and he gave me one)

(I shook my head)

Kwalunga : I don't smoke.

(He started smoking. One after another)

Kwalunga : Ademaro. Talk to me.

Ademaro : I'm selling stones.

Kwalunga : Stones?

Ademaro : Diamonds. Gadaffi steal them and they send us out of the country to sell them.

Kwalunga : Polished?

(He shook his head)

Ademaro : No. Rough. It's impossible to trace it.

(His voice is hoarse. He is only 19 years old but he knows about diamonds now? The world is fucked up.)

Kwalunga : Where do you sell them?

Ademaro : USA Israel and India. They take them to cutting centers.

(I read about people who were stealing diamonds and Cops were on the lookout for them.)

Kwalunga : But the cops are vigilant so how do you guys do it? How do you transport them?

Ademaro : We swallow them.

(I'm shocked)

Kwalunga : You swallow the diamonds?

Ademaro : It's better than stealing them.
One day we went to lift them from the cargo
hold jetliner and I almost died so this is
better but I want out.

(I don't care about all of that. It's the
swallowing part that disturbs me)

Kwalunga : After you swallowed them? how do
you get them out?

Ademaro : It moves through the digestive
tract and passes out of the b....

Kwalunga : I get it bro. Stop (I cut him off)

(I've heard more than enough. I see where this is going.)

Ademaro : Gadaffi won't let me go.

Kwalunga : What does he have on you?

Ademaro : Nothing but he came to my parents house in the middle of the night and I don't how he knew we were staying there. He told me that if I go then he will have me arrested and he will kill my parents my sister and even Thomas.

Kwalunga : He knows Thomas?

Ademaro : He sent me a picture of his house and the picture of Mia with Thomas.

Kwalunga : Fuck it!

Ademaro : I don't want to do this anymore Lunga. I don't. I hate it.

Kwalunga : How much do you know about this Gadaffi?

Ademaro : Nothing. I don't know what I was thinking getting myself into this.

Kwalunga : The diamond lifting? It was from the Swiss Jetliner?

Ademaro : You read about it?

Kwalunga : I did. I'll see what I can do to get you out of this mess.

Ademaro : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : Yeah. What are you going to be up to tomorrow?

Ademaro : Domani e i Morti (Tomorrow is i Morti)

(i Morti is All Souls day. A day dedicated to dear ones who passed away.)

Kwalunga : Ho dimenticato (I forgot)

(He is looking at me)

Ademaro : Tu parli Italiano? (You speak Italian)

Kwalunga : Yeah. I live in Italy. I work with Italians and I fuck a Italian lady everyday and night so I don't have a choice.

(We laughed)

Ade maro : Grazie Lunga. (Thanks)

Kwalunga : Non e niente (It's nothing) As soon I find something on this Gadaffi I will let you know.

Ademaro : Thank you so much. Please take my number.

(He really needs my help and I will do anything to save him.)

Chapter 42

(The following day I woke up and went straight to my house)

Sky : I missed you baby

Kwalunga : I missed you too Sweetheart.

Sky : My mother refused to go and see my father.

Kwalunga : Maybe she shouldn't.

Sky : He knows that she is alive and she is not the reason he is behind bars.

Kwalunga : I know that. Give her some time and she might change her mind. Where is she?

Sky : In the guest room. She is still sleeping.

Kwalunga : I need to go to the office.

Sky : But you told me that you are not going to work today.

Kwalunga : I know sweetheart but I need to go.

(I wrapped my hand around her and kissed her breast.)

Kwalunga : Can you feel that?

Sky : What?

Kwalunga : My erection

(She laughed)

Sky : We are still sick my love.

Kwalunga : I swear I'm going to die. How long does this shit take?

(She laughed)

Sky : Tomorrow I'll be fine baby

Kwalunga : This is torture.

(She ran her hand down to my dick and kissed my neck while brushing my dick. Fuck I missed that. She kissed me down to my chest and all the way to my dick. The warmth of her mouth around my dick caused my body to tremble and I fisted her hair roughly. I pulled and pushed moving my hands in her hair. She gagged each time my dick head hit the back of her throat. There was a knock on my door)

Kwalunga : Fuck (I muttered)

Sky : Sorry baby. I'll get that

(It's probably her mom. Can she leave already?)

Sky : Madre (Mother)

(I knew it. Let me just go and take a cold shower)

Selina : Toi co dang lam gian doan dieu gi do khong? (Am I interrupting something?)

(Of course you are. Just go back to Vietnam please)

Sky : Khong quan trong adesso (Doesn't matter now)

Kwalunga : Morning Mrs Das.

Selina : Selina xin vui long (Selina please)

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Morning Selina.

Selina : Buoi sang con trai (Morning son)

Kwalunga : Please excuse me. I need to take a shower.

(I walked out and took a shower quickly. I wore my ripped jeans and my golf t- shirt with my All star. It was going to be only me at the office anyway.)

(Sky was already downstairs with her mother)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I'm going now.

(The way Sky looked at me. I swear she was undressing me with her eyes.)

Sky : Ok baby.

(Selina whispered something to Sky and Sky went upstairs)

Selina : Toi noi chuyen voi ban (I need to talk to you)

Kwalunga : Non capisco vietnamese (I don't understand vietnamese)

(She laughed)

Selina : Come stava? (How was he?)

Kwalunga : Alessio?

Selina : Uh!

Kwalunga : Stava bene (He was fine)

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : Ti amava (He loved you)

Selina : Toi biet (I know)

(She sighs)

Kwalunga : Gli manchi (He misses you)

(She is shocked)

Selina : Sei sicuro? (Are you sure?)

Kwalunga : Vai a vederlo (Go see him)

(She closed her eyes and rubbed her forehead)

Selina : Non lo so (I don't know)

Kwalunga : Per favore Madre. Fallo per Sky
(Please mother. Do it for Sky)

(She smiled)

Selina : Sei un brav'uomo (You are a good
man)

(I am no good man Selina)

Kwalunga : Devo andare (I have to go)

Selina : Grazie mille (Thank you so much)

Kwalunga : Tenere bene (Keep well)

(I took my laptop bag and my car keys)

Selina : Dio ti benedica (God bless you)

(I walked out. Not after everything I have done Selina)

(I arrived at True Red and I started my research about this Gadaffi. Nothing was useful. The only thing I found was that he is from Russia. I continued searching and my phone interrupted me)

Kwalunga : Yeah. (I answered while I continued with my research)

Lunga it's Thomas. Where are you?

Kwalunga : Oh Thomas Hi. I'm at the office.

Thomas : Why because I gave you a day off?

Kwalunga : There is something important that I needed to take care of.

Thomas : You work too hard Lunga. You need to rest.

(Your brother's life is in line here Thomas)

Kwalunga : I know but this is important.

Thomas : Ok. We are going out today.

Kwalunga : I won't make it. Sorry

Thomas : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : Yes Krane. As soon as I'm done here I'm going home to my wife. I need to spend more time with her.

Thomas : The power of pussy is something else.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : You know it man.

Thomas : Ok fine. Please don't stay there for too long. You need some rest from these investigations.

Kwalunga : I know and I will do as you say.

(I hung up)

(There is nothing about this Gadaffi. Maybe it's time I pay him some visit in Venice)

(I dialed Ademaro's number)

Kwalunga : Ademaro. It's Lunga. Is it safe to talk?

Ademaro : Ye...Yes..Sure (He stutters)

(I'm sure he was checking out the coast)

Kwalunga : Good. I need Gadaffi's Address.

Ademaro : You wanna go there?

Kwalunga : Yes

Ademaro : It's not safe Lunga.

Kwalunga : You don't have to worry about that. Send me the address.

Ademaro : He is in Venice. I'll send you his house address.

Kwalunga : Thanks.

Ademaro : About Thomas? Stai andando...

Kwalunga : Ademaro. Rilassare (Relax) I won't tell him if you don't want me to. (I cut him off before he finishes)

Ademaro : Thank you Lunga. Thank you

Kwalunga : The address please.

(I hung up and a few minutes later he sent me the address)

(If I go via the E35 route I will make it to Venice in 5 hours at least even though there are multiple tolls along this route. I grabbed my car keys and ran into my car)

(The following day I woke up and went straight to my house)

Sky : I missed you baby

Kwalunga : I missed you too Sweetheart.

Sky : My mother refused to go and see my father.

Kwalunga : Maybe she shouldn't.

Sky : He knows that she is alive and she is not the reason he is behind bars.

Kwalunga : I know that. Give her some time and she might change her mind. Where is she?

Sky : In the guest room. She is still sleeping.

Kwalunga : I need to go to the office.

Sky : But you told me that you are not going to work today.

Kwalunga : I know sweetheart but I need to go.

(I wrapped my hand around her and kissed her breast.)

Kwalunga : Can you feel that?

Sky : What?

Kwalunga : My erection

(She laughed)

Sky : We are still sick my love.

Kwalunga : I swear I'm going to die. How long does this shit take?

(She laughed)

Sky : Tomorrow I'll be fine baby

Kwalunga : This is torture.

(She ran her hand down to my dick and kissed my neck while brushing my dick. Fuck I missed that. She kissed me down to my chest and all the way to my dick. The warmth of her mouth around my dick caused my body to tremble and I fisted her hair roughly. I pulled and pushed moving my hands in her hair. She gagged each time my dick head hit the back of her throat. There was a knock on my door)

Kwalunga : Fuck (I muttered)

Sky : Sorry baby. I'll get that

(It's probably her mom. Can she leave already?)

Sky : Madre (Mother)

(I knew it. Let me just go and take a cold shower)

Selina : Toi co dang lam gian doan dieu gi do khong? (Am I interrupting something?)

(Of course you are. Just go back to Vietnam please)

Sky : Khong quan trong adesso (Doesn't matter now)

Kwalunga : Morning Mrs Das.

Selina : Selina xin vui long (Selina please)

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Morning Selina.

Selina : Buoi sang con trai (Morning son)

Kwalunga : Please excuse me. I need to take a shower.

(I walked out and took a shower quickly. I wore my ripped jeans and my golf t- shirt with my All star. It was going to be only me at the office anyway.)

(Sky was already downstairs with her mother)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I'm going now.

(The way Sky looked at me. I swear she was undressing me with her eyes.)

Sky : Ok baby.

(Selina whispered something to Sky and Sky went upstairs)

Selina : Toi noi chuyen voi ban (I need to talk to you)

Kwalunga : Non capisco vietnamese (I don't understand vietnamese)

(She laughed)

Selina : Come stava? (How was he?)

Kwalunga : Alessio?

Selina : Uh!

Kwalunga : Stava bene (He was fine)

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : Ti amava (He loved you)

Selina : Toi biet (I know)

(She sighs)

Kwalunga : Gli manchi (He misses you)

(She is shocked)

Selina : Sei sicuro? (Are you sure?)

Kwalunga : Vai a vederlo (Go see him)

(She closed her eyes and rubbed her forehead)

Selina : Non lo so (I don't know)

Kwalunga : Per favore Madre. Fallo per Sky
(Please mother. Do it for Sky)

(She smiled)

Selina : Sei un brav'uomo (You are a good man)

(I am no good man Selina)

Kwalunga : Devo andare (I have to go)

Selina : Grazie mille (Thank you so much)

Kwalunga : Tenere bene (Keep well)

(I took my laptop bag and my car keys)

Selina : Dio ti benedica (God bless you)

(I walked out. Not after everything I have done Selina)

(I arrived at True Red and I started my research about this Gadaffi. Nothing was useful. The only thing I found was that he is from Russia. I continued searching and my phone interrupted me)

Kwalunga : Yeah. (I answered while I continued with my research)

Lunga it's Thomas. Where are you?

Kwalunga : Oh Thomas Hi. I'm at the office.

Thomas : Why because I gave you a day off?

Kwalunga : There is something important that I needed to take care of.

Thomas : You work too hard Lunga. You need to rest.

(Your brother's life is in line here Thomas)

Kwalunga : I know but this is important.

Thomas : Ok. We are going out today.

Kwalunga : I won't make it. Sorry

Thomas : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : Yes Krane. As soon as I'm done here I'm going home to my wife. I need to spend more time with her.

Thomas : The power of pussy is something else.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : You know it man.

Thomas : Ok fine. Please don't stay there for too long. You need some rest from these investigations.

Kwalunga : I know and I will do as you say.

(I hung up)

(There is nothing about this Gadaffi. Maybe it's time I pay him some visit in Venice)

(I dialed Ademaro's number)

Kwalunga : Ademaro. It's Lunga. Is it safe to talk?

Ademaro : Ye...Yes..Sure (He stutters)

(I'm sure he was checking out the coast)

Kwalunga : Good. I need Gadaffi's Address.

Ademaro : You wanna go there?

Kwalunga : Yes

Ademaro : It's not safe Lunga.

Kwalunga : You don't have to worry about that. Send me the address.

Ademaro : He is in Venice. I'll send you his house address.

Kwalunga : Thanks.

Ademaro : About Thomas? Stai andando...

Kwalunga : Ademaro. Rilassare (Relax) I won't tell him if you don't want me to. (I cut him off before he finishes)

Ademaro : Thank you Lunga. Thank you

Kwalunga : The address please.

(I hung up and a few minutes later he sent me the address)

(If I go via the E35 route I will make it to Venice in 5 hours at least even though there

are multiple tolls along this route. I grabbed my car keys and ran into my car)

Chapter 43

(I was one hour away from Rome)

Kwalunga : Shit I need to call Sky (I whispered to myself)

(I quickly dialed her number)

Sky : Baby I miss you.

(That's what she said as soon as she answered my call)

Kwalunga : I miss you too sweetheart. Look my love. I'm going to Venice. I'll be home late

Sky : Venice? Why?

Kwalunga : Work sweetheart work

Sky : You do know that I hate your job.
Right?

Kwalunga : Yes sweetheart but you love me
and my money.

(She laughed)

Sky : Yes baby. Please be safe.

Kwalunga : I will. I love you.ok?

Sky : I love you too baby.

(I hung up and I accelerated my speed)

(5 hours later I was in Venice. As soon as I got to Gadaffi's gate his car went out and I followed him. I had to ensure that he didn't notice me)

(He parked at the restaurant and walked in. He looked so decant to be doing that bloody job. I waited for a few minutes then I followed him.)

(I sat down right behind him. He was sitting alone and 15 minutes later some guy arrived and joined Gadaffi)

Guy : Gadaffi

Gadaffi : Aleksei. che succede? (What's going on)

Aleksei : Politsiya. Prishel ko mne domoy
(Russian Police came to my house)

(Aleksei is speaking Russian but fuck I got this shit)

(Gadaffi banged the table and looked around quickly)

Gadaffi : Ser'yezno ? (Really?)

(Now they are both speaking Russian)

Aleksei : Jah. Ya skazal im YA ne znayu tebya
(I told them I don't know you)

Gadaffi : Khorosho (Good)

Aleksei : Kakiye u vas plany? (What's your plan)

Gadaffi : Nichego takogo (Nothing)

Aleksei : Kakiye? (What?)

(Waiter was making his way to me and I signaled to go away. I can't afford any destruction right now)

Gadaffi : Oni ishchut dyla Ivan Fedorov. ya Gadaffi (They are searching for Ivan Fedorov. I am Gadaffi)

(They both laughed)

(This bastard. Really?)

Aleksei : Kak Italy? (How is Italy)

Gadaffi : Skuchnny (Boring)

Aleksei : Zhenshchiny? (Women?)

Gadaffi : Seksual'nyy (Sexy)

(They laughed)

(They went on and on about women and useless stuff. The only thing I got here is Gadaffi's real name. I took it down and walked out.)

(I arrived back in Rome after midnight and Sky was fast asleep. I went to my study room and started my research about Ivan Fedorov. He escaped from Prison in Russia and came to Italy. It states that he was arrested for murder of a young man by the name of Mikhail Agapov.)

Kwalunga : Gotcha

(I took a shower and went to bed. Sky was naked and she smelled so good. I wrapped my

arm around her waist and kissed the back of her neck)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart?

(Silence)

(I pushed my erected dick around her buttocks and I groaned. She took my hand down to her pussy and she opened her legs. I ran my fingers around her clit and her body trembled while she moaned. I entered her from behind. I thrust my dick inside her. She mewled and moaned with each stroke as I picked up the pace my love. I'm going to Venice. I'll be home late

Sky : Venice? Why?

Kwalunga : Work sweetheart work

Sky : You do know that I hate your job.
Right?

Kwalunga : Yes sweetheart but you love me
and my money.

(She laughed)

Sky : Yes baby. Please be safe.

Kwalunga : I will. I love you.ok?

Sky : I love you too baby.

(I hung up and I accelerated my speed)

(5 hours later I was in Venice. As soon as I
got to Gadaffi's gate his car went out and I
followed him. I had to ensure that he didn't
notice me)

(He parked at the restaurant and walked in. He looked so decant to be doing that bloody job. I waited for a few minutes then I followed him.)

(I sat down right behind him. He was sitting alone and 15 minutes later some guy arrived and joined Gadaffi)

Guy : Gadaffi

Gadaffi : Aleksei. che succede? (What's going on)

Aleksei : Politsiya. Prishel ko mne domoy
(Russian Police came to my house)

(Aleksei is speaking Russian but fuck I got this shit)

(Gadaffi banged the table and looked around quickly)

Gadaffi : Ser'yezno ? (Really?)

(Now they are both speaking Russian)

Aleksei : Jah. Ya skazal im YA ne znayu tebya
(I told them I don't know you)

Gadaffi : Khorosho (Good)

Aleksei : Kakiye u vas plany? (What's your plan)

Gadaffi : Nichego takogo (Nothing)

Aleksei : Kakiye? (What?)

(Waiter was making his way to me and I signaled to go away. I can't afford any destruction right now)

Gadaffi : Oni ishchut dyla Ivan Fedorov. ya
Gadaffi (They are searching for Ivan
Fedorov. I am Gadaffi)

(They both laughed)

(This bastard. Really?)

Aleksei : Kak Italy? (How is Italy)

Gadaffi : Skuchnny (Boring)

Aleksei : Zhenshchiny? (Women?)

Gadaffi : Seksual'nyy (Sexy)

(They laughed)

(They went on and on about women and useless stuff. The only thing I got here is Gadaffi's real name. I took it down and walked out.)

(I arrived back in Rome after midnight and Sky was fast asleep. I went to my study room and started my research about Ivan Fedorov. He escaped from Prison in Russia and came to Italy. It states that he was arrested for murder of a young man by the name of Mikhail Agapov.)

Kwalunga : Gotcha

(I took a shower and went to bed. Sky was naked and she smelled so good. I wrapped my arm around her waist and kissed the back of her neck)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart?

(Silence)

(I pushed my erected dick around her buttocks and I groaned. She took my hand down to her pussy and she opened her legs. I ran my fingers around her clit and her body trembled while she moaned. I entered her from behind. I thrust my dick inside her. She mewled and moaned with each stroke as I picked up the pace unable to take it slow. I tightened my hand on her breast)

Sky : Oh God (She murmured)

(I woke up and made breakfast for my fiance before I went to work.)

(At True Red)

Anthony : You look fucked up.

Kwalunga : I know. I only slept for 5 hours

Anthony : Pussy will kill you Lunga.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : No I went to Venice.

Anthony : Why?

Kwalunga : For some investigation.

Anthony : Oh yeah?

Kwalunga : Yeah. Nothing major.

Anthony : Ok

(My phone rang. It was Ademaro)

Kwalunga : Anthony can I please take this in private?

Anthony : Who is it?

Kwalunga : Sky (I lied)

Anthony : Ok

(He walked out)

Kwalunga : Ademaro talk to me

Ademaro : Gadaffi called. He has a job for me.

Kwalunga : When ?

Ademaro : Domani sera (Tomorrow night)

Kwalunga : Don't go. I will

Ademaro : No Lunga he will kill me

Kwalunga : Non lo fara (He won't)

(I hung up. I have another trip to Venice)

(As soon as I hung up another call came in. A call from South Africa)

Kwalunga : Yebo Sawubona (I answered)

Kwalunga imina u Sthe.

(Oh fuck)

Kwalunga : Sthembele how are you?

Sthembele : I'm ok. Basithembile is in...

(Call disconnected)

(I tried to call her back but had no luck. I hope it was nothing important. I went to Thomas's office)

Kwalunga : Thomas I need to go home.

Thomas : Is everything OK?

Kwalunga : Sky is not feeling well (I lied)

(I need to go get some rest and prepare myself for my trip to Venice)

Thomas : Ok. Please go and I hope it is nothing that bad.

Kwalunga : Me too. Thanks man

Thomas : And tomorrow please don't come to work. You look like a ghost bro and you need some rest.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Thanks bro.

(You just saved me from asking for a day off tomorrow)

Kwalunga : Please tell Anthony and Tina that I had to go.

Thomas : Will do. Call me if there is anything I can do.

Kwalunga : Noted

(I walked out)

Chapter 44

(The following day I was at Venice and when I got to Gadaffi's house the time was exactly 17h00. Gadaffi was on the phone)

Gadaffi : Where the fuck is this boy!?! (He snapped)

Kwalunga : Lui non viene (He is not coming)

(I sat down)

Gadaffi : Kto ty? (Who are you?)

(Oh you want us to do this in Russian?. Bring it on my brother)

Kwalunga : Kto Mikhail Agapov? (Who is Mikhail Agapov)

(He froze)

Kwalunga : Pogovori so mnoy Ivan ili zhe eto Gadaffi? (Talk to me Ivan or is it Gadaffi?)

Gadaffi : Skol'ko ty khochesh? (How much do you want?)

Kwalunga : Pokinut' Ademaro Krane (Leave Ademaro Krane)

(He sighed)

Gadaffi : Ili zhe kakiye? (Or what?)

Kwalunga : Pomnit' v militsiya? (Remember the Police of Russia?)

(His breathing grew louder and I laughed)

Kwalunga : Pomnit' v General Vladimir Alexandrovich Kolokoltsev? (Remember the General of the police?). (I said his name and paused)

Kwalunga : On idet za toboy (He is coming for you)

Gadaffi : CTON!!! (Stop!!)

(He shouted and I stood up)

Kwalunga : Now listen. If you dare touch that Krane boy. ya ub'yu tebya (I'll kill you)

(He is silent)

Kwalunga : Ponimat'? (Understand?)

Gadaffi : Jah

Kwalunga : Otlichno (Excellent)

(I walked out)

(I went back to Rome and by 23h30 I was home)

Sky : Baby!!!

(Sky came running from upstairs. She was so happy. She hugged me and kissed me)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart why aren't you sleeping?

Sky : My mother is going to visit my father tomorrow.

Kwalunga : For real?

Sky : She said I must thank you for that.

(I chuckled)

Kwalunga : I didn't do anything.

Sky : You did my love. You spoke to her and she changed her mind. Thank you Morgan you're a lifesaver.

(Not her calling me Morgan again)

Kwalunga : I'm glad I could help.

Sky : You saved me from the streets and now you just brought my family together. Thank you

Kwalunga : I love you.

(I kissed her lips and my phone interrupted us. It was Ademaro)

Kwalunga : Ademaro are you ok?

Ademaro : I'm more than ok. Gadaffi called me and told me to delete his number and forget about him.

(I sighed in relief)

Kwalunga : Please stay out of trouble. I won't be able to help you next time.

Ademaro : How did you do it?

Kwalunga : Don't worry about that.

Ademaro : You saved me Zio Lunga

(Oh I'm uncle now?)

Kwalunga : It's nothing.

Ademaro : It's everything. God bless you.

(I hung up. When it comes to blessings I don't know what to say.)

Kwalunga : Let's go to bed sweetheart

(My phone rang again. A call from South Africa. I know it is Sthembele)

Kwalunga : Sthe

Sthembele : Basithembile has been shot

Kwalunga : Ini?

Sthembele : Yes. His baby daddy shot her and he shot himself after that.

(Sthembele is panicking)

Kwalunga : Sthe

Sponsored

you're a lifesaver.

(Not her calling me Morgan again)

Kwalunga : I'm glad I could help.

Sky : You saved me from the streets and now you just brought my family together. Thank you

Kwalunga : I love you.

(I kissed her lips and my phone interrupted us. It was Ademaro)

Kwalunga : Ademaro are you ok?

Ademaro : I'm more than ok. Gadaffi called me and told me to delete his number and forget about him.

(I sighed in relief)

Kwalunga : Please stay out of trouble. I won't be able to help you next time.

Ademaro : How did you do it?

Kwalunga : Don't worry about that.

Ademaro : You saved me Zio Lunga

(Oh I'm uncle now?)

Kwalunga : It's nothing.

Ademaro : It's everything. God bless you.

(I hung up. When it comes to blessings I don't know what to say.)

Kwalunga : Let's go to bed sweetheart

(My phone rang again. A call from South Africa. I know it is Sthembele)

Kwalunga : Sthe

Sthembele : Basithembile has been shot

Kwalunga : Ini?

Sthembele : Yes. His baby daddy shot her and he shot himself after that.

(Sthembele is panicking)

Kwalunga : Sthe calm down. Is she dead?

Sthembele : No. Mlondi died.

Kwalunga : Mlondi?

Sthembele : Her baby daddy.

Kwalunga : That's good

Sthembele : She wants to see you Lunga.

Kwalunga : Who?

Sthembele : Basithembile

(I'm shocked)

Kwalunga : She hated me.

(Sky is holding my arm. Staring at me)

Sthembele : It doesn't matter now Lunga.
Please go and see her if you can.

Kwalunga : Ok. Ok fine.

Sthembele : She is at Melomed Hospital

Kwalunga : Ok

Sthembele : Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : Yeah?

Sthembele : Ngiyabonga bafo.

(I hung up)

Kwalunga : I need to go to Richards bay

Sky : Where is that?

Kwalunga : South Africa sweetheart. My sister has been shot and she is pregnant.

(Her mouth is gape open)

(I dialed Thomas's number. I don't care if he is sleeping)

Thomas : Is Sky ok?

(Now I remember that I said Sky was sick)

Kwalunga : Yeah man. I need to get to South Africa. It's urgent

Thomas : What happened?

Kwalunga : My sister's life is in the line.

Thomas : You will use our Business Jet.
Anthony is coming with you.

Kwalunga : Thank you.

(He hung up)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart please pack my bag.

Sky : I'm going with you.

Kwalunga : No sweetheart.

(I went upstairs. I need to shower. I'm tired
but I can't rest)

Chapter 45

(I slept the whole trip to South Africa and Finally Anthony woke me up and we were in Richards Bay Airport. Minutes later were in Melomed Richards Bay Hospital)

Kwalunga :Nurse Hi. I'm here for Basithembile Hlela.

Nurse : And you are?

Kwalunga : Kwalunga Hlela

Nurse : Mr Hlela I'm not sure if you will be allowed to see her now. She just came back from Theatre.

Kwalunga : I want to see her now!!! (I shouted)

(A doctor came to us)

Doctor : Is there a problem?

Nurse : Mr Hlela is here to see Ms
Basithembile Hlela

(Doctor went through his file)

Doctor : Mr Hlela may I have a word with you
in private.

Kwalunga : Yeah

(I followed him)

Doctor : Mr Hlela I'm sorry about your wife.

Kwalunga : She is not my.... Never mind

(I sighed)

Doctor : She sustained severe injuries and her condition is critical. She is in the ICU. We tried to remove the bullet from her head but she had a stroke in the middle of the operation and we had to stop.

Kwalunga : How about the baby?

Doctor : We managed to save your son and he is fine.

(I want to tell him that the baby is not mine but I do not have the energy)

Kwalunga : Can I see her?

Doctor : Yes of course. You need to spend all the time you need with her because the

chances of her pulling through are very slim.
I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : Take me to her

Doctor : Of course. Please follow me.

(Basithembile was covered in ICU ventilators
and other things)

Doctor : I'll give you some space.

(Doctor walked out and I didn't know what to
do)

Kwalunga : Mbile. I'm here

(That's how I used to call her when I was
young. I held her hand)

Kwalunga : Your baby is fine. Please wake up because he needs you.

(She squeezed my hand. She can hear me)

Kwalunga : You have to wake up from this bed. Do you understand me?

(She wanted to speak and I went closer to her)

Basithembile : I... I... I'm so... Sorry Lulu.

(I smiled. She used to call me Lulu and tickled me after that)

Kwalunga : Get some rest.

Basithembile : Ta...tak...take him with you.
Pleeee please

(What is she talking about?)

(There was that Ti ti ti sound and I knew it was over)

Kwalunga : Hlela Madlula Maqeda ka Nkani ka Dabula iziziba. Phumula Hangala.
Ungikhonzele ku Baba no Mama

(I said my final goodbye and doctors and nurses rushed in)

Doctor : Mr Hlela you need to leave. Now!!

(I kissed her forehead with tears running down my face)

Doctor : Mr Hlela please

(I walked out and Anthony was waiting for me. He hugged me tightly)

Kwalunga : It's over. She is gone
Sponsored

Anthony.

Anthony : I'm so sorry Lunga.

(Minutes later the doctor arrived)

Doctor : Mr Hlela I'm sorry. We did our best.

Kwalunga : Save it.

Doctor : About the baby sir are y.....

Kwalunga : He is mine and I'm taking him to Italy with me.

Doctor : But Mr Hlela I don't recommend that you travel with the ba....

Kwalunga :Do I look like I care about your recommendations?

Doctor : I understand your frustrations but.....

Kwalunga : Ey fakof wena!!!! Do what you have to do but I'm taking that baby with me.

Doctor : Please fill out these forms.

(Anthony took the forms from him)

Doctor : I need a name for the baby.

(I swallowed the lump in my throat)

Kwalunga : Ung'thembile Hlela

(Yes Basithembile trusted me with her baby so his name is Ung'thembile Hlela. My son)

Chapter 46

(I kept checking on Ung'thembile every 10 minutes from South Africa to Rome. I couldn't believe that he is mine. When we got out of the hospital Mthunzi was there and I thought he would fuck things up for me but all he said was that " Give him the baby. He knows what he is doing". The way he looked at me with those eyes I swear he knew that I killed his brother and maNcwane. He only asked me why I didn't come for their funeral and I kept quiet. I don't know if I should go for Basithembile's funeral but her son has to go and that means I have to go too. I never

thought I would have to go back there after what I did.)

(We finally made it to Rome and Ung'thembile was fine and Anthony kept saying " You do know that It's by the grace of God that Unga made it here alive?" and that when it started to hit me. What have I done? How did I insist on taking a newborn baby? Let alone to fly with a newborn baby. How am I going to raise this baby?)

(As soon as we arrived in Rome we went to Anthony's house. The baby was crying non stop. There was this one kind nurse at Melomed Hospital. She went to buy me clothes and baby formula with her money. yes with her money. She said "Lunga If you are going to fly with this baby then you need these". I wanted to pay back her money and

she said no. She was too friendly. way too friendly.)

Kwalunga : Where is this fuckin doctor? This baby is crying non stop and it's driving me nuts.

Anthony : He is coming don't worry.

(Anthony is busy walking all around the house with Ung'thembile in his arms but still he won't stop crying.)

Kwalunga : Unga come on man just shut up!

Anthony : Lunga. Unga is a baby and you can't speak to him like that.

Kwalunga : Can he just stop crying?

Anthony : Lunga are you sure about this?

(What is he talking about?)

Kwalunga : About what?

Anthony : About Unga. Are you sure that you will be able to handle this? Raising a child, especially a newborn. It no child's play. You need to think really hard about this shit bro.

(I'm silent)

Anthony : We are going to be with you every step of the way but I just want to know if you really up for this.

Kwalunga : I do Anthony. I do

Anthony : Good. It's still a long journey but you are not alone.

(Doctor walked in)

Kwalunga : Doctor thank goodness you are here. What's wrong with him?

Doctor : He is a newborn and he needs to be examined. Why didn't you take him to the hospital?

Kwalunga : Because we pay you a fuckin lots of money for you to help us. Now shut the fuck up and start doing what we pay you to do. Oh and Doc?

Doctor : Yes Mr Hela

Kwalunga : Make sure he stops crying. Ok?

(Doctor shook his head and took Unga from Anthony)

Kwalunga : I need some beer.

Anthony : It's after midnight Lunga.

Kwalunga : And?

Anthony : Nothing. I'll get you a beer.

Kwalunga : Thank you.

(Anthony stepped out)

Doctor : Everything seems normal to me.

Kwalunga : Then why is he crying non stop?

Doctor : Mr Hela. Did you fly with this baby?

Kwalunga : I did but that is not important right now. Make him stop crying because he is driving me crazy.

Doctor : When was the last time you gave him his milk?

(I tried to think and I don't remember so I kept quiet)

Doctor : And his diaper? When last did you change it?

(What the fuck have I gotten myself into?)

Doctor : Mr Hela did you steal this baby?

Kwalunga : No. Fuck! Hell no

Doctor : Ok ok I believe you. The baby is fine. Just change his diaper and feed him. He will sleep after that.

Kwalunga : Anthony!!

(Anthony rushed in)

Anthony : What's wrong?

Kwalunga : Forget about the beer. This baby is hungry and I need to change him.

Anthony : I'll prepare his formula. You change him

Doctor : He needs to bath this baby. (He had a smirk on his face)

(This Doctor is enjoying this. I know)

Anthony : Dr Ferrari you can go now.

Kwalunga : Thank you Anthony.

(Dr Ferrari shook his head and walked away)

Kwalunga : I need Sky right now.

Anthony : We are in the middle of a crisis and you are thinking about pussy? Come on Lunga.

Kwalunga : I'm not talking about pussy An..

Anthony : I don't want to hear it. Change Unga's diaper.

(I didn't mean the pussy I swear to God)

(I changed Ung'thembile and minutes later Anthony brought his bottle and fed him)

Anthony : Go to bed. I'll handle this

Kwalunga : I need to see Sky and explain all this.

Anthony : Damn! I forgot about Sky. You'll go now?

(I sighed)

Kwalunga : Yeah.

Anthony : I'll install his seat in your car.

Kwalunga : I still can't believe that nurse bought Unga a whole baby car seat.

Anthony : Plus clothes and formula.

Kwalunga : Don't mention it.

Anthony : Bro I swear that nurse was crushing hard on you. She left all her duties and went to the mall.

Kwalunga : That was crazy.

Anthony : She couldn't stop looking at you.
She literally cried when we left the hospital.

Kwalunga : You are lying.

Anthony : Webabo! I'm telling you. Her
friend was comforting her.

("Webabo" is the only word he learned from
South Africa and he keeps saying it.)

Kwalunga : Ay I don't believe you.

Anthony : You don't have to believe me but
it's true.

Kwalunga : Please go and Install that seat.

Anthony : Give me your car keys. What's the time now?

Kwalunga : After two.

Anthony : Damn! Are you sure that it's a good idea to go out with the baby at this time?

Kwalunga : I need Sky

Anthony : I get it.

(He took my car keys and went to the garage where I left my car)

(Unga was fast asleep in bed. I held his tiny hand and smiled)

Kwalunga : I'm taking you home now boy boy. Our home.

(I thought of Sky and I got nervous. What if this is too much for her?. Is this a good idea?)

Anthony : I'm done

(That was quick. Isn't it?)

Kwalunga : Already?

Anthony : Yeah. You can go now. I want to sleep (He laughed)

(I took Unga and Anthony followed me with his stuff)

(I carefully placed him on his seat and closed the car roof)

Anthony : Please drive safely

Kwalunga : Will do.

(I got to the driver's seat)

Kwalunga : Caldo?

Anthony : Yeah?

Kwalunga : Thank you.

Anthony : We are family.

(I drove off)

Chapter 48

(3 days later the paperwork was done and luckily Basithembile told the doctors to give me her baby right after delivery and it was in writing so it made everything easier.

Ung'thembile Leggero Hlela is officially and legally my son.)

(I was ready to go to South Africa for my sister's funeral and Sky made it clear that I am not taking Unga with me. I kissed Unga one more time. It's like he grows up every hour)

Kwalunga : Are you sure that you are going to be fine?

Sky : Yes I am. baby don't worry Unga and I will be fine.

Kwalunga : Ok

Sky : Ademaro is waiting for you downstairs.
He is taking you to the airport.

Kwalunga : He is? I wasn't aware

(Sky shrugged)

Kwalunga : I'm going to miss you sweetheart

Sky : I'm going to miss you too baby.

Kwalunga : I will call you as soon as I land.

Sky : My mother said she is coming to see us
today.

Kwalunga : Is she still in Rome?

Sky : Yes. She is staying with a friend

(She rolled her eyes. She doesn't believe her mother)

Kwalunga : That's good. I'm glad you won't be alone with the baby.

Sky : I'm fine without her.

Kwalunga : You need to forgive her sweetheart.

Sky : Yeah right.

(I know she won't. Not any time soon)

Kwalunga : I need to go

Sky : Travel safely baby. I love you

Kwalunga : I love you more.

(I kissed her lips and dragged out my suitcase.)

(Ademaro was downstairs. He was busy on his phone.)

Kwalunga : Are you not going back to Venice?

Ademaro : Hi to you too Lunga.

(I chuckled)

Ademaro : I am going back soon.

Kwalunga : I heard that you are taking me to the airport.

Ademaro : I am. We need to talk and it cannot wait.

Kwalunga : I see. Should I be worried?

Ademaro : Not really.

Kwalunga : Let's go. We will finish this conversation in the car.

(We got to my car and Ademaro was the one driving)

Ademaro : I think Gadaffi is onto something.

Kwalunga : Something like what?

Ademaro : I don't know. That's the thing. He called me and asked me about you.

Kwalunga : Oh he is still in contact with you?

Ademaro : Not exactly. He asked me your name and other stuff

Kwalunga : Stuff like what?

Ademaro : The basics. Where you from and about your family and more.

Kwalunga : And you told him.

Ademaro : I was scared Lunga.

Kwalunga : Thomas was right. You are a dick sometimes. What did you tell him?

(He sighed)

Ademaro : Your name and about your sister who died. That's all.

(He is lying. That's not all)

Kwalunga : I told you that I took care of Gadaffi. I don't understand what the fuck

was scaring you. What if he goes for my family?

(He is silent)

Kwalunga : I asked you a question Ademaro.

Ademaro : That's why I'm telling you that he phoned me. I'm giving you heads up.

Kwalunga : Heads up my foot!! (I yelled)

(His eyes were filled with fear)

Kwalunga : Did you tell him anything about Sky and Leggero?

(He shook his head)

Ademaro : I promise I didn't.

Kwalunga : Good because I can assure you that the person you need to fear more than Gadaffi is right here next to you.

(He quickly looked at me)

Kwalunga : Now focus on driving.

(I took out my phone. I needed to sort out a few things. This bloody Gadaffi better be not up to something stupid or I will make sure I put him behind bars this time.)

(3 days later the paperwork was done and luckily Basithembile told the doctors to give me her baby right after delivery and it was in writing so it made everything easier.

Ung' thembile Leggero Hlela is officially and legally my son.)

(I was ready to go to South Africa for my sister's funeral and Sky made it clear that I am not taking Unga with me. I kissed Unga one more time. It's like he grows up every hour)

Kwalunga : Are you sure that you are going to be fine?

Sky : Yes I am. baby don't worry Unga and I will be fine.

Kwalunga : Ok

Sky : Ademaro is waiting for you downstairs. He is taking you to the airport.

Kwalunga : He is? I wasn't aware

(Sky shrugged)

Kwalunga : I'm going to miss you sweetheart

Sky : I'm going to miss you too baby.

Kwalunga : I will call you as soon as I land.

Sky : My mother said she is coming to see us today.

Kwalunga : Is she still in Rome?

Sky : Yes. She is staying with a friend

(She rolled her eyes. She doesn't believe her mother)

Kwalunga : That's good. I'm glad you won't be alone with the baby.

Sky : I'm fine without her.

Kwalunga : You need to forgive her sweetheart.

Sky : Yeah right.

(I know she won't. Not any time soon)

Kwalunga : I need to go

Sky : Travel safely baby. I love you

Kwalunga : I love you more.

(I kissed her lips and dragged out my suitcase.)

(Ademaro was downstairs. He was busy on his phone.)

Kwalunga : Are you not going back to Venice?

Ademaro : Hi to you too Lunga.

(I chuckled)

Ademaro : I am going back soon.

Kwalunga : I heard that you are taking me to the airport.

Ademaro : I am. We need to talk and it cannot wait.

Kwalunga : I see. Should I be worried?

Ademaro : Not really.

Kwalunga : Let's go. We will finish this conversation in the car.

(We got to my car and Ademaro was the one driving)

Ademaro : I think Gadaffi is onto something.

Kwalunga : Something like what?

Ademaro : I don't know. That's the thing. He called me and asked me about you.

Kwalunga : Oh he is still in contact with you?

Ademaro : Not exactly. He asked me your name and other stuff

Kwalunga : Stuff like what?

Ademaro : The basics. Where you from and about your family and more.

Kwalunga : And you told him.

Ademaro : I was scared Lunga.

Kwalunga : Thomas was right. You are a dick sometimes. What did you tell him?

(He sighed)

Ademaro : Your name and about your sister who died. That's all.

(He is lying. That's not all)

Kwalunga : I told you that I took care of Gadaffi. I don't understand what the fuck was scaring you. What if he goes for my family?

(He is silent)

Kwalunga : I asked you a question Ademaro.

Ademaro : That's why I'm telling you that he phoned me. I'm giving you heads up.

Kwalunga : Heads up my foot!! (I yelled)

(His eyes were filled with fear)

Kwalunga : Did you tell him anything about Sky and Leggero?

(He shook his head)

Ademaro : I promise I didn't.

Kwalunga : Good because I can assure you that the person you need to fear more than Gadaffi is right here next to you.

(He quickly looked at me)

Kwalunga : Now focus on driving.

(I took out my phone. I needed to sort out a few things. This bloody Gadaffi better be not up to something stupid or I will make sure I put him behind bars this time.)

Chapter 49

(I arrived in Kwa Maphumulo and It was already the day of Basithembile's funeral. It was raining and as soon as I got home I remembered everything that I did. I could still smell the ashes. I stepped inside the house that I set on fire with maNcwane inside and everything came back to me. I remembered the look in her eyes before I walked out and burned her alive. I'm just like Manqoba and his wife. No difference at all.)

We didn't lay any charges against you but I know it was you.

(That was Mthunzi behind me. I froze)

Kwalunga : I had no choice baba

(He is still behind me and I have no intentions of turning around. I'm not strong enough to look at him in the eyes)

Mthunzi : You always have a choice and you chose to kill them. You should have gone back to Italy after you found out about what they did to your mother but No. You went ahead and did what you did.

Kwalunga : I should have gone back to Italy? Baba omncane are you serious right now? You expected me to leave the people who killed my mother just like that?

Mthunzi : maNcwane was already paying for her sins. Wayesehlanya Kwalunga. Wasn't that enough?

Kwalunga : No it wasn't!

Mthunzi : We only buried the hands of Manqoba. Everything else was eaten by a snake.

Kwalunga : I'm glad you got to bury something. What about my mother?

(I slowly turned around)

Kwalunga : I only buried the ashes of my mother. I was only 16 Mthunzi but I was forced to bury my mother's ashes because you and Manqoba refused to help my father with my mother's funeral!! (I shouted)

Mthunzi : Lunga you killed your father.

Kwalunga : And I will do it all over again if I have to.

Mthunzi : You don't understand what I'm saying to you.

Kwalunga : I understand you. Very loud. You are blaming me for killing people who killed my mother because you have no idea what I had to go through after losing my mother.

(He shook his head)

Mthunzi : The funeral service is about to begin. Where is Basithembile's son?

Kwalunga : I left him. He was not fit to fly.

Mthunzi : I understand. We need to talk about something very important after the funeral. Follow me

(I followed him to the tent)

(I sat down next to a woman and bowed my head)

Kwalunga I'm glad you made it.

(I recognize this voice. I slowly lifted up my head and it was the nurse from Melomed Hospital. I didn't even get her name that day. What is she doing here?)

Kwalunga : Hi

Nurse : How are you?

Kwalunga : I'm alright

Nurse : Good

(We sat in silence. The funeral service went on and on. I can't stand funerals so I Walked out and went to what used to be my father's room. I took out my vodka that I brought from Italy and drank from the bottle. I need to calm myself down)

(The door opened and the "Melomed nurse" walked in)

Kwalunga : Are you stalking me now nurse?

(She laughed)

Nurse : Kutheni undibiza ngomongikazi?
Ndingu Lonwabo Mzamane. Ndizalelwe eMpuma Koloni. (Why are you calling me

Nurse? My name is Lonwabo Mzamane. I'm from the Eastern Cape)

(She is speaking Xhosa. Why is she telling me all this?)

(I'm silent)

Lonwabo : Oh my God I'm sorry. I forgot you from Italy and you don't understand Isixhosa. I'm really sorry. My na.....

Kwalunga : Ndiyakuva Lonwabo. Wenza ntoni apha kokwethu? (I hear you. What are you doing here at home?)

(She seemed shocked)

Lonwabo : Uthetha nyani? (Do you really speak Xhosa?)

Kwalunga : Xa kunyanzeleke uba ndithethe.
(If I'm required to)

Lonwabo : Wow I'm impressed.

(I shrugged and continued drinking my
vodka)

Lonwabo : Ngaba uyasela utywala? (Are you
drinking alcohol?)

(That's none of your business woman)

Kwalunga : No. It's juice.

(She laughed)

Lonwabo : And Zulu? Do you still remember
how to speak isiZulu?

(What kind of question is that?)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I am a Zulu man and nothing will ever take that away from me.

Lonwabo : Indoda yomZulu. You are so beautiful (She whispered. she was looking at me and her eyes were moving quickly)

(She quickly swept her gaze from me and cleared her throat. I'm sure she didn't mean to say that out loud)

Lunga

Sponsored

I'm glad you made it.

(I recognize this voice. I slowly lifted up my head and it was the nurse from Melomed Hospital. I didn't even get her name that day. What is she doing here?)

Kwalunga : Hi

Nurse : How are you?

Kwalunga : I'm alright

Nurse : Good

(We sat in silence. The funeral service went on and on. I can't stand funerals so I Walked out and went to what used to be my father's room. I took out my vodka that I brought from Italy and drank from the bottle. I need to calm myself down)

(The door opened and the "Melomed nurse" walked in)

Kwalunga : Are you stalking me now nurse?

(She laughed)

Nurse : Kutheni undibiza ngomongikazi?
Ndingu Lonwabo Mzamane. Ndizalelwe
eMpuma Koloni. (Why are you calling me
Nurse? My name is Lonwabo Mzamane. I'm
from the Eastern Cape)

(She is speaking Xhosa. Why is she telling me
all this?)

(I'm silent)

Lonwabo : Oh my God I'm sorry. I forgot you
from Italy and you don't understand
Isixhosa. I'm really sorry. My na.....

Kwalunga : Ndiyakuva Lonwabo. Wenza ntoni
apha kokwethu? (I hear you. What are you
doing here at home?)

(She seemed shocked)

Lonwabo : Uthetha nyani? (Do you really speak Xhosa?)

Kwalunga : Xa kunyanzeleke uba ndithethe.
(If I'm required to)

Lonwabo : Wow I'm impressed.

(I shrugged and continued drinking my vodka)

Lonwabo : Ngaba uyasela utywala? (Are you drinking alcohol?)

(That's none of your business woman)

Kwalunga : No. It's juice.

(She laughed)

Lonwabo : And Zulu? Do you still remember how to speak isiZulu?

(What kind of question is that?)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I am a Zulu man and nothing will ever take that away from me.

Lonwabo : Indoda yomZulu. You are so beautiful (She whispered. she was looking at me and her eyes were moving quickly)

(She quickly swept her gaze from me and cleared her throat. I'm sure she didn't mean to say that out loud)

Lunga are you here?

(That was Sthembele at the door)

Sthembele : Bhutina.... Oh I'm sorry I didn't mean to intrude. Hi Lonwabo.

Lonwabo : Hi Sthe.

Sthembele : Bhuti you are next for okhulumela abafowabo. Baba u Mthunzi said I must let you know.

(I am not going to stand in front of all those people and speak about Basithembile.)

Kwalunga : No Sthe I'm not coming. Mbile and I had no relationship so I'm not going to stand in front of those people and lie.

Sthembele : Kodwa Kwalunga yini u.....

Kwalunga : Sthe forget about it and please close the door on your way out. It's bloody freezing here.

(She walked out and I drank more of my vodka. I don't understand why but I'm angry now)

Lonwabo : Are you ok?

Kwalunga : What are you doing here?

Lonwabo : Ndizele wena(I'm here for you)
I mean your sister. Your sister's funeral.
Bendimazi kwaye sizi chommie (I knew your
sister and we were friends)

Kwalunga : I see.

Lonwabo : Ubengeve mhle thixo wami kwaye
nibahle nonke pha kokwenu (She was so
beautiful and you are all beautiful in your
family)

Kwalunga : Thanks.

Lonwabo : Beseloko ethetha ngawe (She always spoke about you) She loved you. When Mlondi used to beat her up she would scream and say " Ukuba u Lunga ube apha ubungasoze undibethe mna Mlondi" (If Lunga was here you wouldn't be beating me up like this Mlondi). (She paused)

Lonwabo : There is something she used to say and I laughed every time she said it. She would say "Ngizalwa nensizwa mina Lonwabo. Inja engafika la kuhlehle u fish"

(She laughed)

Kwalunga : That bastard used to beat up my sister?

Lonwabo : They fought every day and he finally killed her but I'm glad he died too.

Kwalunga : It's a pity that I didn't get to kill him myself. He deserved to die with more than just a bullet in his head.

(Why is she smiling?)

Lonwabo : Can I?

(She touched my eyebrows and ran her fingers softly)

Lonwabo : Beautiful (She whispered)

(This is dangerous)

Kwalunga : Thanks (I whispered back)

(Why the fuck am I doing that? It must be alcohol)

(Our eyes locked and she touched my lips. I cleared my throat and removed her hand. I can't allow this)

Lonwabo : Lunga please. I want this in fact I want you. From the moment I saw you in that hospital you've been the only person in mind. The only person I think about before I sleep.

(Anthony was right about this woman)

Kwalunga : No I can't. I'm married

Lonwabo : Nam nditshatile but I want you so badly. Please khawube nami noba ikanye nje qha.

(This woman is really crazy. She is telling me that she is married but she is asking me to fuck her.)

Kwalunga : Sisi wami today is my sister's funeral. Your friend's funeral and you are here asking me to have sex with you. Yeses! please go.

Lonwabo : Just onc.....

(There was a bang sound and the door was down. I stood up quickly and stood in front of Lonwabo. Whatever is going on here I have to protect her from it)

Are you Kwalunga Hlela?

(What is SAPS doing here)

Kwalunga : Yes I am. What do you want?

Police : Oh uwena lo ontshontsha izingane zabantu?

(I didn't steal any babies. What the fuck is he talking about?)

Kwalunga : What are you talking about?

Police : Kwalunga Hlela you are under arrest.

Kwalunga : Like hell I am!!! On what charges?

Police : Mdunge. Faka lenja ozankosi I cabanga ukuthi ise Italy la.

(Mdunge cuffed my hands tightly)

Kwalunga : Uyangilimaza wena slima!!!

(Lonwabo was weeping. Sthembele and Mthunzi walked in)

Sthembele : What's going on here?

Police : Iphi ingane wena? (He slapped me)

(I didn't flinch)

Kwalunga : Fakof.

(The police laughed and I knew it was fake)

Police : Take him away.

Mthunzi : No. Ima kancane muntu womthetho.
Wenzi umfana?

Police : He knows what he did.

Mthunzi : Nifika kanjani kodwa kunje?
Aniboni kodwa ukuthi siyangcwaba? This boy
needs bury his sister. He can't go to jail.

Kwalunga : Baba omncane don't worry. I'll
handle this.

(The police pushed me out of the house)

Sthembele : Lunga!!!!!! (She screamed)

(I was behind in a police van. What the hell
just happened?)

Chapter 50

(They took me straight to the holding cell.
Nothing was done. No fingerprints nothing. I
found 3 men in the cell and 2 were smoking.

One was sitting quietly in a corner holding a tennis ball in his hand)

(I walked in and sat down. I'm not going to greet them)

Man 1 : Eita (Greetings)

Kwalunga : Sho

Man 2 : Zikhiphani? wafahlaka yi usuhlafuna insimbi (What's going on? Why are you angry?)

Kwalunga : Lasciami in pace (Leave me alone)

(Why am I speaking Italian? This shit is getting to me)

Man 1 : Le bhari icava isiTaliyane (This fool knows Italian)

(Did he just call me a fool?)

Kwalunga : Uthini? (What did you say?)

(I stood up and walked closer to him)

Man 1 : Zithini? O batla gore ke hochayele
weer weer? O bhari nja yaka. Verstaan? (You
want me to tell you again? You are a fool.
Understand?)

Kwalunga : Figlio di puttana (You son of a
bitch)

Man 2: Ei! Ei! anikahle nina (you two Stop!)

Man 3 : Javas ihlehlele (Javas leave them)

(I pinned that bastard against the wall and tightened my hands on his neck with my knee pressed on his stomach)

Kwalunga : Ubani ibhari manje? (Who is a fool now?)

Man 2 : lomjita uzom'bhodiza (This guy is going to kill him)

Hlela come here!!!!

(I slowly stopped. The cop was calling me)

Police : What do you think you are doing?

(I'm silent and that bastard was coughing down the floor)

Police : Come. You have a visitor

(I followed him to a dark room)

Kwalunga : Ngizonzani mina la?

Police : Shut up and sit down

(I sat down. Lights came on and Aleksei was standing in front of me. I froze)

(Why is this Russian in South Africa?)

Aleksei : Moguchiy Kalunga (The Mighty Kwalunga)

Kwalunga : Chto ty khochesh'? (What do you want)

(He laughed and clapped hands)

Aleksei : Ty govorish' Russian? (You speak Russian?)

(Silence)

Aleksei : Vy oshiblis' ne s tem chelovekom
(You messed with the wrong person)

(I chuckled)

Kwalunga : Vy imeyete v vidu Gadaffi? (You mean Gadaffi?)

Aleksei : Pokinut' Gadaffi (Leave Gadaffi)

Kwalunga : And if I don't?

Aleksei : Chto ty khochesh' v Italy Ty gluppy South African? (What do you want in Italy You stupid South African?)

Kwalunga : I am there to represent all the South Africans and to prove to you that

South Africans are not stupid as you think.
Uyangithola?

Aleksei : Ty sukin syn (You son of a bitch)

(I stood up and pushed back the chair. I tightened my grip on the table. I want to beat the hell out of him.)

Kwalunga : Gadaffi is a coward. He sent you here to fight his battles. I don't deal with cowards Aleksei. All I need is to make one call and the militsiya would deal with Gadaffi.

Aleksei : Razberis' s nim (Deal with him)

(He walked out and some guys started beating me up and and I fought back. There was blood in my arm. They stabbed me.)

Stop!!!!

(The police shouted rushing in)

(They took me back to my cell. Javas and his friends were still there and they looked scared. I was holding my arm trying to block the blood using my hand. My leather glove was covered in blood)

Man 3 : Out yaka zwakala yi (come here my man)

(That was "Tennis man" calling me. I sat down next to him)

Man 3 : Entlek labo hata bak'chuneng? (What did these cops do to you?)

Kwalunga : It wasn't the cops

(He was wearing a jacket and he took it off.
He then pulled his t-shirt and handed it to
me)

Man 3 : Use that to block the blood.

(The 2 men were staring at us)

Kwalunga : ta (Thank you)

Man 3 : Kwalunga what brings you here?

(How did he know my name?)

Kwalunga : honestly I don't know anymore.

Man 3 : Who are you?

(Didn't he just say my name?)

Kwalunga : Kwalunga

Man 3 : I didn't ask for your name.

(I remained silent. I didn't know what to say)

Man 3 : You need to find yourself. You just know your name but you don't know the person behind that name.

Kwalunga : Where do I start?

Man 3 : Take off your left glove and I will tell you.

(He is not doing this to me. No)

Man 3 : Do it.

(I slowly removed my glove. He took my hand and looked at it for a few seconds and pressed it on his chest with his eyes closed. It took 2 minutes then he removed it)

(He sighed)

Man 3 : Start with your father.

Kwalunga : What?

Man 3 : I don't have anymore answers and I don't want to talk any more.

(His tone was firm.)

(I put back my glove. This guy is crazy)

(The next morning the police called me for questioning)

Detective : Where is the baby?

Kwalunga : I told you he was not fit to fly so I left him in Italy.

Detective : Why did you take him?

Kwalunga : His mother
Sponsored

what brings you here?

(How did he know my name?)

Kwalunga : honestly I don't know anymore.

Man 3 : Who are you?

(Didn't he just say my name?)

Kwalunga : Kwalunga

Man 3 : I didn't ask for your name.

(I remained silent. I didn't know what to say)

Man 3 : You need to find yourself. You just know your name but you don't know the person behind that name.

Kwalunga : Where do I start?

Man 3 : Take off your left glove and I will tell you.

(He is not doing this to me. No)

Man 3 : Do it.

(I slowly removed my glove. He took my hand and looked at it for a few seconds and

pressed it on his chest with his eyes closed.
It took 2 minutes then he removed it)

(He sighed)

Man 3 : Start with your father.

Kwalunga : What?

Man 3 : I don't have anymore answers and I
don't want to talk any more.

(His tone was firm.)

(I put back my glove. This guy is crazy)

(The next morning the police called me for
questioning)

Detective : Where is the baby?

Kwalunga : I told you he was not fit to fly so I left him in Italy.

Detective : Why did you take him?

Kwalunga : His mother who is my sister asked me to take him before she died.

Detective : Well his father's family said you took him without them knowing.

Kwalunga : His father killed my sister!

(I hear gulps)

Detective : Where is proof that your sister left him under your care? As his guardian??

Kwalunga : I am not his guardian. I am his father.

Detective : I see. Give me the proof

Kwalunga : I don't have it here.

Detective : Tough.

Drop all the charges against him. You have nothing on him. Ung'thembile Leggero Hlela is legally his son. Here is your requested proof.
Detective.

(That was Lonwabo "The nurse" walking in carrying a file. I smiled)

Detective : Who are you?

Lonwabo : Lonwabo Mzamane from Melomed Richards Bay Hospital. The daughter of superintendent of police Abongile Mxenge.

(Detective swallowed roughly while opening a file)

Lonwabo : Let him go Detective Ndlovu.

(Detective closed a file and handed it back to Lonwabo.)

Detective : You are free to go Mr Hlela.

Kwalunga : Thank you.

Lonwabo : What happened to his arm.

Detective : Sister Mzamani this is not a hotel. Anything can happen.

Lonwabo : You will regret this (She walked out)

(I walked out following the lady who saved the day. I might as well just give her what she wanted after what she has done for me today.)

Chapter 51

(Everything was left back home including my phone and I'm sure Sky has been calling non stop. I was glad that I'm out and I'm looking forward to flying back to Italy because honestly something bad always happens when I'm here.)

Kwalunga : Thank you for everything. You don't have to take me home I will call my friend Lwandile to pick me up. Ngicela nje ungboleke I phone yakho ngimfonele.

Lonwabo : There is no need for all of that.
We are going to my house.

Kwalunga : No

Lonwabo : Please let's go to my house so that
you can get some rest. I need to take care of
that wound also before it causes an
infection.

Kwalunga : I have nothing here. My clothes
are back home and I need clean clothes.

Lonwabo : Don't worry about clothes.

Kwalunga : I can't go to your house. What
about your husband?

Lonwabo : My husband is in Richards Bay and We are not going to the Bay. My house is 30 minutes away from here.

Kwalunga : You have another house?

Lonwabo : I do. Before nditshate bendihlala khona.

Kwalunga : Why did you keep it after you got married?

Lonwabo : It's where my peace is. Lunga can we not talk about my husband or my marriage life?

(She is not happy in her marriage. I see it)

Kwalunga : Let's go.

Lonwabo : My car is parked on that side.

Kwalunga : Kude kanje? Do you see the sun?

(She laughed)

Lonwabo : You are not a yellow bone so I don't get why are you complaining.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart do you see my skin? I'm dark and If I spend 10 minutes under this sun then trust me I'll be pitch black.

(We laughed and went to her car)

(Her phone rang)

Lonwabo : It's your sister. Hi Sthe (She answered)

(Silence)

Lonwabo : Yes he is out. I will bring him home later.

(Silence)

Lonwabo : Yes he is here. No problem

Lonwabo : Utata omncinci wakho. Here talk to him.

(She handed me her phone)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane (I answered)

Mthunzi : Where are you Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : I'm fine baba

Mthunzi : I didn't ask how are you ngibuze ukuthi ukephi Kwalunga Hlela?

Kwalunga : Ngikhona la e Durban baba

(Why is he shouting at me?)

Mthunzi : Awubuye lapho. Kumele uzogeza wena ukhiphe lelobhadi lasejele.

(Why is this cleansing so important now?
They did mention it when I was arrested for the first time)

Kwalunga : I understand baba omncane and I will come back today.

(Lonwabo looked at me and shook her head. I don't understand what she meant by that)

Mthunzi : manje Kwalunga ubuye manje! kade singcwaba udadewenu izolo lokhu kodwa wena usutanasa nezifebe.

Kwalunga : Baba that's not what I'm doing.

(He hung up)

(I sighed. I hope she didn't hear that)

Kwalunga : My father is so difficult.

Lonwabo : He is getting old.

Kwalunga : What happened back there? How did I get arrested?

(She sighed)

Lonwabo : Did you see the Russians?

Kwalunga : They are the one who stabbed me. Do you know how they got to South Africa?

Lonwabo : I don't know but what I know is that they made a deal with the Mccarthy's. They told them to get you arrested and they gave them the money.

Kwalunga : The Mccarthy's?

Lonwabo : Ung'thembile owaka Mccarthy. His biological father is Mccarthy. Mloni's father is colored. A useless alcoholic who abused his wife sexually and physically every damn day.

Kwalunga : That's why Mloni did what he did to my sister. He learned from his father.

Lonwabo : Yes. The Russians paid them but you know what Lungile did?

Kwalunga : Who is Lungile?

Lonwabo : Mloni's mother. After the Russians paid her the money she took a bus to Zimbabwe with all the money and she didn't open a case as she promised the russians. The russians went to the police station and bribed the SAPS to arrest you

Kwalunga : Those police are corrupt.

Lonwabo : Not all of them. Only the two who came to arrest you and Detective Ndlovu.

Kwalunga : Now I understand why they just took me to the holding and nothing was done.

Lonwabo : There were no charges against you. All that was just an act but they knew that you took Ung'thembile but there was no evidence that you stole him and Lungile was gone. They were hoping that you might confess about stealing Ung'thembile and

then lock you up for good as Russians instructed them.

Kwalunga : Aleksei is dumb for real. How do you pay someone before they do the job?

Lonwabo : I'm glad he is dumb because if he wasn't you'd be in jail as we speak.

Kwalunga : Yeah right. Who told you all that?

Lonwabo : I got all the info from my father and I had to go to Richards bay hospital and get all the proof that Ung'thembile is yours.

Kwalunga : Thank you Nwabo.

Lonwabo : I'd do anything for you.

(I raised one eyebrow. Really?)

(Finally we arrived at her house. The house is simple but beautiful)

Kwalunga : This is nice

Lonwabo : Enkosi. You can go and take a shower and please give me your clothes so that I can wash and dry them before you go.

Kwalunga : What am I going to wear while I'm waiting for my clothes?

(She gave me a big towel)

Lonwabo : That.

Kwalunga : Oh I see.

(I went to take a shower and I was thinking about Sky and my son. I miss them so much. I finished and walked out wrapped in a towel)

(Lonwabo was busy peeling something)

Kwalunga : I'm done

(She looked at me with her mouth gape open. She dropped down a knife that she was using. What is wrong with her?)

Kwalunga : Are you ok? Did you hurt yourself? (I picked up a knife)

(She shook her head and swallowed hard)

Kwalunga : I left my clothes in the bathroom. I wanted to wash them myself but my arm is killing.

(She is just staring at my dick if not my dick her eyes move up to my chest. Maybe I should wear my dirty clothes)

Kwalunga : Are you ok?

(She cleared her throat and went back to what she was doing)

Lonwabo : Yeah yeah I'm fine.

Kwalunga : May I sleep for a few minutes please? The pain is killing me

Lonwabo : Yeah sure but I can't give you painkillers now. You need to eat first.

Kwalunga : I'm not hungry. Please give me.

Lonwabo : No I can't. Those t....

Kwalunga : Nwabo please. I'm dying here.

Lonwabo : Ok fine. Let me see that

(She looked at my arm)

Lonwabo : It doesn't look that bad. I need to clean it and put a dressing on it. Come with me

(I followed her to her bedroom)

Lonwabo : How old are you?

Kwalunga : 25

Lonwabo : You look 30

Kwalunga : I know.

Lonwabo : You do?

Kwalunga : I've been told that countless times.

(She laughed)

Lonwabo : Please get to bed and let me take care of that. Your body is older than you.

(I lay in bed and she poured something like a spirit in my wound. I flinched)

Kwalunga : Then maybe my parents lied about my age.

(She was done with my wound)

Lonwabo : Probably. Here take these now. I'll get you some water.

Kwalunga : Don't worry about water. (I swallowed the tablets.) I got this. Can I sleep now?

(She was staring at me again. She was daydreaming)

Kwalunga : Lonwabo?

Lonwabo : You are so.... I mean what were you saying?

Kwalunga : Can I sleep here?

Lonwabo : Sleep with me... what am I saying?
I mean yes. You can sleep here. I need to finish cooking. Please excuse me

(She walked out. Wololo)

(I couldn't sleep at all. I don't know if it was because I wasn't familiar with the bed or what)

Lonwabo : Are you awake?

(She asked while walking in)

Kwalunga : Do you have beer? This shit is not going away.

Lonwabo : The pain?

Kwalunga : Yeah.

Lonwabo : Give it some time and no I don't have beer.

(She laughed)

Kwalunga : How old are you?

Lonwabo : 37

Kwalunga : You look younger than that.

(She looked 37. I was lying)

Lonwabo : Oh please. (She smiled)

Kwalunga : I need to get going.

Lonwabo : Let me take a warm bath and then I can take you home. Are you sure that you are not hungry?

Kwalunga : No. I'm in pain

(She laughed and walked out. Minutes later she walked in naked)

(My dick tent the towel. Damn my dick was hard as hell. I'm a man after all. She lotioned her arms with her back facing me. Her ass looked beautiful)

(I pulled my towel and got out of bed)

Kwalunga : Let me help you with that.

(My erect dick touched her ass and she froze. I took her lotion and rubbed her breasts. She moaned and her breathing grew louder. I massaged her nipples. Her head fell back. I ran my hand down to her pussy. She snatched my leather glove out my hand. I rubbed her clit with my fingers)

Lonwabo : Oh God!

Kwalunga : Do you want this?

Lonwabo : I always wanted this. Always (She whispered)

Kwalunga : Do you have a condom?

Lonwabo : Yes. Here.

(I opened her drawer and took out a box of condoms)

(My dick was inside her. No pussy is compared to Sky's. I pounded into her and her breast bounced with each stroke. She screamed a lot and it was irritating me)

Lonwabo : Lunga! Lunga! Lunga!

(I stopped)

Kwalunga : What's wrong?

(Silence)

(I thrust in. Her body vibrated)

Lonwabo : Lungaa! (She screamed with her knees shaking. She almost fell down)

(I pulled out. I didn't cum but at least she did. I took my glove and went to the bathroom. I pulled out a condom)

(When I came back she was laying in bed)

Kwalunga : We need to get going.

Lonwabo : Please don't go.

Kwalunga : I have to go Nwabo.

Lonwabo : You are the first guy to make me cum.

(I wanted to laugh but this is actually sad and I don't know what to say)

Kwalunga : Your husband needs to do better.

Lonwabo : Please don't leave me.

Kwalunga : I need to go back to Italy. My wife and my Son are waiting for me.

Lonwabo : Please just spend one night with me. Please

Kwalunga : This was a mistake. We have partners Lonwabo. We are both married. Please bring me my clothes

(She wore her gown and walked out disappointed but There is nothing I can do)

(I went back home and Mthunzi was not there. Only Sthembele and maMyeni were home)

Kwalunga : Where is baba?

Sthembele : He is not here. Ngicela ungithula

Kwalunga : I can't believe that you guys still fetch water from the river.

Sthembele : Sinabo ompompi hau. Ukuthi amanzi awaphumi namhlanje.

Kwalunga : From last year awaphumi. Right?

(She laughed)

maMyeni : Your phone has been ringing non stop from the day you were arrested.

Kwalunga : Ngayikhohlwa yazi Mah.

Sthembele : We didn't take your calls.

Kwalunga : Why not? Sky is going to kill me.

Sthembele : Sky?

Kwalunga : My fiance

maMyeni : Maybe it was about Unga.

Kwalunga : Or she was just checking up on me.

Sthembele : When are you bringing them here?

Kwalunga : Soon. Don't worry

maMyeni : You need to fix a few things before you get married Kwalunga.

Kwalunga : Things like what?

maMyeni : Like cleansing.

Kwalunga : But I did that now.

maMyeni : Ubugezela ukuthi ubuya ejele. It has nothing to do with your parents.

Kwalunga : But the cleansing ceremony was done after my parents passed away.

maMyeni : After Mangoba and maNcwane?

Kwalunga : I don't need to cleanse myself because of them.

maMyeni : Sthembele please excuse us. I need to speak to your brother alone.

Sthembele : Kulungile Mah.

(Sthembele walked out)

maMyeni : Wee Kwalunga do you see all the things that are happening in your life?
Lamashwa onawo?

Kwalunga : Mah u Manqoba told me straight up that I am a magnet for bad luck.

maMyeni : And you are fine with that?

Kwalunga : Kumele ngenzeni Mah? I was born with this thing and there is nothing I can do about it.

maMyeni : Ungakhulumi kanjalo.

Kwalunga : It's true Mah. It started with my dog Mah. Ngaboshwa emazweni and that was before Manqoba and maNcwane died so what's happening in my life has got nothing to do with their death.

(She sighed)

maMyeni : Lunga please you have to do this.
Do it for me and Mthunzi

(I don't understand now)

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

maMyeni : If you don't do this then your
father and I will never have kids of our own.

(I've never been so confused like this in my
entire life)

Kwalunga : Mah uthini kumina?

(She started crying)

maMyeni : I can't do this anymore.

Kwalunga : You can't do what Mah?

maMyeni : Mthunzi will explain everything to you when he comes back from Johannesburg.

Kwalunga : When is he coming back?

maMyeni : I don't know maybe in two weeks.

Kwalunga : I won't be here. Tomorrow I'm going back to Italy. Unga needs me.

maMyeni : Do whatever you want Kwalunga but bear in mind that nothing will ever work out for you until you do what needs to be done. Abaphansi bathukuthele and they will ruin everything for you.

Kwalunga : Ngihlangaphi mina Mah?

maMyeni : Yo! Yo! wake wasiyala u Manqoba.

(She walked out with her hands over her head)

What's going on here?

(Sthembele asked walking in)

Kwalunga : I don't know. You tell me

Sthembele : Maybe you should wait for baba to come back bafo.

Kwalunga : No I can't wait. Tomorrow I'm going. My life is in Italy Sthe. My family is there

Sthembele : What about us Lulu? What about us? Are we not your family?

Kwalunga : Come on. You know what I mean.

Sthembele : No I don't. Please educate me

Kwalunga : Unga and Sky need me more than you guys do.

Sthembele : Oh please Kwalunga don't give me that. You always run away from your problems that's what you do. You can't handle the heat

Kwalunga : What are you talking about?

Sthembele : It's your life that is fucked up not mine so do what you do best. You always run away from the truth. angithi?

Kwalunga : Iqiniso lani?

Sthembele : Go Lulu. Go back to Italy to your wonderful son and wife but when shit hits the fan don't come back here and blame us. You are fucking up your own life

Kwalunga : Tell me why I shouldn't go and I will stay

Sthembele : I can't.

Kwalunga : I'm off to bed and I won't be here when you all wake up.

(I headed out)

Sthembele : Whatever happens don't forget that you did it to yourself..

Kwalunga : Whatever Sthe.

(I don't give a shit anymore)

(I went back to Italy. If I stayed one more day at home I would have gone crazy.)

Sky : Morgan I'm asking you for the last time why were you not taking my calls.

Kwalunga : Sky come on. I just got here and you are already questioning me ay kahle wena.

Sky : Is it another woman? Is that it?

Kwalunga : You are being ridiculous right now and you know it?

Sky : You are not answering my question. Who is she?

(She is screaming now and it's driving me insane)

Kwalunga : Our son is sleeping. Stop screaming

Sky : Am I screaming? Morgan since when do you speak to me like that?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart calm down.

Sky : No. Maybe I don't want to calm down. Was she better than me? Was her pussy better than mine!? (She yelled)

Kwalunga : I'm telling you for the last time to stop screaming and sit down. I will explain everything to you.

Sky : I don't want to sit down and I don't want to stop screaming.

(I headed out)

Sky : Where do you think you are going?

Kwalunga : To the bathroom. Is that a problem?

Sky : Morgan please leave this house. I don't care where you sleep but you are not sleeping here today

Kwalunga : Are you serious right now?

Sky : Just go.

Kwalunga : Sky I was arrested. Ok? Are you happy now?

Sky : You are lying. Just get out and leave me and my son alone. Go back to your bitch

(This woman is crazy)

Kwalunga : Uyangidakelwa wena manje.

Sky : Whatever it is that you are saying I don't care.

Kwalunga : What the fuck do you want from me woman?

Sky : Morgan please go. I don't want to see you right now.

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : Sky Das are you sure that you want me to go?

Sky : Who is she Morgan?

(Yeah sure I fucked another woman but she doesn't know that and that is not a reason I didn't pick up her calls. She is just guessing)

Kwalunga : I told you. There is no other woman

(I took my car keys)

Sky : Where are you going?

Kwalunga : You told me to go and that's exactly what I'm doing.

(She started weeping)

Kwalunga : Sky what do you want me to do?

Sky : I can't stomach the thought of someone else touching your body. Morgan I can't.

Kwalunga : Baby listen to me. There is nobody else

(My phone rang and it was Lonwabo. Wrong timing.)

(I looked at the screen then at Sky)

Sky : Answer it and put it on loud speaker

Kwalunga : No.

Sky : Get out Morgan. Get out!!!!

(She threw everything on the floor. She does that every time when she is angry and I hate it)

Kwalunga : You need to calm the fuck down.

(She threw a pillow at my face.I walked out)

(She screamed)

(I drove to Anthony's house)

Anthony : Lunga. You back

(He was happy to see me)

Kwalunga : Yeah man. How are things going?

Anthony : Aren't you supposed to be home fucking Sky?

Kwalunga : She is crazy today

(Anthony laughed)

Anthony : Women are all crazy

Kwalunga : Sky leads the pack

(He laughed)

Anthony : What did you do this time?

Kwalunga : I fucked up and I need a place to crash. Is my room still available?

Anthony : Any day my man. Spill

Kwalunga : There is another woman

Anthony : I knew it

Kwalunga : It was a once off thing bro.

Anthony : And?

Kwalunga : She won't stop calling.

Anthony : Your dick is always getting you in trouble

Kwalunga : Yeah right.

Anthony : When did you come back?

Kwalunga : Today

Anthony : Have you heard anything from Thomas?

Kwalunga : No. Why?

Anthony : We know about Gadaffi and Ademaro

Kwalunga : Oh yeah?

Anthony : Yep. Ademaro told us everything and Gadaffi is coming for you.

Kwalunga : He tried but he didn't succeed.

Anthony : Bro what do you mean?

Kwalunga : He sent his squad to South Africa and I got arrested.

Anthony : For real?

Kwalunga : They used Leggero to get me arrested and his friend came to see me and they roughed me up

Anthony : That's serious bro. When?

Kwalunga : A couple of days ago.

Anthony : He phoned Ademaro yesterday and told him that he is coming for you.

Kwalunga : Yesterday? Are you sure?

Anthony : Yes. We need to put him behind bars

Kwalunga : No we need to take care of him permanently.

Anthony : Lunga we don't kill. Our job is to put these criminals away

Kwalunga : Gadaffi will never stay behind bars.

Anthony : Not if we call the Russian cops.

Kwalunga : He escaped right under their noses

Anthony : Lunga this guy is going to kill you.

Kwalunga : I will kill him first and he won't see it coming. Do you have food? I'm starving

Anthony : Yeah sure. You are always eating but I don't know where all this food is going. You are getting taller every day instead of getting fat

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Where is Nicola?

Anthony : She got crazy and she left

Kwalunga : She is always crazy but I don't blame her. Dating you is crazy

Anthony : She will come back because she can't resist my dick

Kwalunga : What did you do this time?

Anthony : She found me with another bitch in bed.

Kwalunga : Who is that bitch?

Anthony : I forgot her name.

Kwalunga : Anthony you are fucked up bro.

Anthony : I know that. Let's go and eat.

Kwalunga : Only if Sky knew how much I missed her bro

(My phone rang)

Kwalunga : I hope that's her. (I pulled out my phone from my jeans)

(It's Lonwabo for the 6th time)

Kwalunga : Hi

Anthony : Is it her?

(I shook my head)

Lonwabo : I miss you so much sthandwa sami

(Sthandwa sami?)

Kwalunga : Oh yeah?

Lonwabo : I'm thinking of coming to Italy

Kwalunga : No no. You can't

Lonwabo : Please Lunga. I need to see you.

Kwalunga : I told you what happened between you and I was a mistake. A huge one.

Lonwabo : You don't mean that.

Kwalunga : I do. Thank you for everything you did for me but please stop calling me Nwabo.

Lonwabo : Why don't you allow me to come to Italy so that we can sit down and talk?

Kwalunga : There is nothing to talk about. Sharp we fucked and that was it we need to take care of him permanently.

Anthony : Lunga we don't kill. Our job is to put these criminals away

Kwalunga : Gadaffi will never stay behind bars.

Anthony : Not if we call the Russian cops.

Kwalunga : He escaped right under their noses

Anthony : Lunga this guy is going to kill you.

Kwalunga : I will kill him first and he won't see it coming. Do you have food? I'm starving

Anthony : Yeah sure. You are always eating but I don't know where all this food is going. You are getting taller every day instead of getting fat

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Where is Nicola?

Anthony : She got crazy and she left

Kwalunga : She is always crazy but I don't blame her. Dating you is crazy

Anthony : She will come back because she can't resist my dick

Kwalunga : What did you do this time?

Anthony : She found me with another bitch in bed.

Kwalunga : Who is that bitch?

Anthony : I forgot her name.

Kwalunga : Anthony you are fucked up bro.

Anthony : I know that. Let's go and eat.

Kwalunga : Only if Sky knew how much I missed her bro

(My phone rang)

Kwalunga : I hope that's her. (I pulled out my phone from my jeans)

(It's Lonwabo for the 6th time)

Kwalunga : Hi

Anthony : Is it her?

(I shook my head)

Lonwabo : I miss you so much sthandwa sami

(Sthandwa sami?)

Kwalunga : Oh yeah?

Lonwabo : I'm thinking of coming to Italy

Kwalunga : No no. You can't

Lonwabo : Please Lunga. I need to see you.

Kwalunga : I told you what happened between you and I was a mistake. A huge one.

Lonwabo : You don't mean that.

Kwalunga : I do. Thank you for everything you did for me but please stop calling me Nwabo.

Lonwabo : Why don't you allow me to come to Italy so that we can sit down and talk?

Kwalunga : There is nothing to talk about.
Sharp we fucked and that was it nothing
more.

Lonwabo : Andikhoni ulibala ngawe Lunga. You
are driving me crazy

Kwalunga : Well it's time you stop thinking
about me because nothing will ever happen
between you and I.

Lonwabo : Please. I need you

Kwalunga : You don't. Please stop

Lonwabo : Ok. Ok fine I'll stop

Kwalunga : Thank you. Look Nwabo You're a
beautiful woman but not for me. I have a
wife and please respect that Sweetheart

Lonwabo : I love you Kwalunga

Kwalunga : No no You don't. You are just confused. Please forget about me.

(She hung up)

Kwalunga : Yo! Women

Anthony : They will kill you one day Lunga.

Kwalunga : I'm not fucking any woman ever again.

Anthony : After today.

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

Anthony : Some girls are coming over.

Kwalunga : Uyahlanya. I just told you that Sky is angry with me because of some woman.

Anthony : She doesn't have to know. Just a quick fuck and they will go

Kwalunga : Anthony no. I'm not going to fuck anyone

Anthony : Come on bro.

Kwalunga : Call them and cancel everything. You and I are not fucking anyone today.

Anthony : You like spoiling the fun.

Kwalunga : You need to give Nicola a break from these women.

Anthony : Maybe you right.

Kwalunga : I'm always right. My food please

(He laughed)

Anthony : What's her name?

Kwalunga : Who?

Anthony : The one who just called you now.

Kwalunga : Oh you mean Lonwabo. She is....

Anthony : Lunga wait. Are you falling for this woman? Is that why you keeping her away?

Kwalunga : No. Why are you saying that?

Anthony : You have a stupid grin on your face

Kwalunga : Sky is the only woman I love Anthony. She is tough like my sunflower Zinzi and I love tough women. Lonwabo is weak and soft. She is like ummm.....I don't know bro but she has that soft touch that tender love. Maybe it's because of our age difference.

Anthony : How old is she?

Kwalunga : 37

(His eyes are wide open)

Anthony : Old women are dangerous in bed bro.

Kwalunga : She knows nothing about all that. She is so innocent bro. The way she screamed and all that It sounded so innocent.

Anthony : Damn. I feel you bro

Kwalunga : I don't want to be with her but I don't want to lose her at the same time. It's crazy.

Anthony : Dude you love this woman. Admit it.

Kwalunga : No no it's not love. It's just something I never felt not after my mother passed away. I don't even want to fuck her again.

Anthony : Was it that bad?

Kwalunga : Better than Meloni

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : But I wasn't feeling it.

Anthony : But you know your fiancée is crazy and if she finds out about this woman trust me hell will break all loose ends.

(I chuckled)

Kwalunga : I know. Let me try calling her and see if she is still crazy.

(Anthony laughed)

What's going on here?

(Sthembele asked walking in)

Kwalunga : I don't know. You tell me

Sthembele : Maybe you should wait for baba to come back bafo.

Kwalunga : No I can't wait. Tomorrow I'm going. My life is in Italy Sthe. My family is there

Sthembele : What about us Lulu? What about us? Are we not your family?

Kwalunga : Come on. You know what I mean.

Sthembele : No I don't. Please educate me

Kwalunga : Unga and Sky need me more than you guys do.

Sthembele : Oh please Kwalunga don't give me that. You always run away from your problems that's what you do. You can't handle the heat

Kwalunga : What are you talking about?

Sthembele : It's your life that is fucked up not mine so do what you do best. You always run away from the truth. angithi?

Kwalunga : Iqiniso lani?

Sthembele : Go Lulu. Go back to Italy to your wonderful son and wife but when shit hits the fan don't come back here and blame us. You are fucking up your own life

Kwalunga : Tell me why I shouldn't go and I will stay

Sthembele : I can't.

Kwalunga : I'm off to bed and I won't be here when you all wake up.

(I headed out)

Sthembele : Whatever happens don't forget that you did it to yourself..

Kwalunga : Whatever Sthe.

(I don't give a shit anymore)

(I went back to Italy. If I stayed one more day at home I would have gone crazy.)

Sky : Morgan I'm asking you for the last time why were you not taking my calls.

Kwalunga : Sky come on. I just got here and you are already questioning me ay kahle wena.

Sky : Is it another woman? Is that it?

Kwalunga : You are being ridiculous right now and you know it?

Sky : You are not answering my question.
Who is she?

(She is screaming now and it's driving me insane)

Kwalunga : Our son is sleeping. Stop screaming

Sky : Am I screaming? Morgan since when do you speak to me like that?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart calm down.

Sky : No. Maybe I don't want to calm down.
Was she better than me? Was her pussy
better than mine!?! (She yelled)

Kwalunga : I'm telling you for the last time to
stop screaming and sit down. I will explain
everything to you.

Sky : I don't want to sit down and I don't
want to stop screaming.

(I headed out)

Sky : Where do you think you are going?

Kwalunga : To the bathroom. Is that a
problem?

Sky : Morgan please leave this house. I don't
care where you sleep but you are not sleeping
here today

Kwalunga : Are you serious right now?

Sky : Just go.

Kwalunga : Sky I was arrested. Ok? Are you happy now?

Sky : You are lying. Just get out and leave me and my son alone. Go back to your bitch

(This woman is crazy)

Kwalunga : Uyangidakelwa wena manje.

Sky : Whatever it is that you are saying I don't care.

Kwalunga : What the fuck do you want from me woman?

Sky : Morgan please go. I don't want to see you right now.

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

(She is silent)

Kwalunga : Sky Das are you sure that you want me to go?

Sky : Who is she Morgan?

(Yeah sure I fucked another woman but she doesn't know that and that is not a reason I didn't pick up her calls. She is just guessing)

Kwalunga : I told you. There is no other woman

(I took my car keys)

Sky : Where are you going?

Kwalunga : You told me to go and that's exactly what I'm doing.

(She started weeping)

Kwalunga : Sky what do you want me to do?

Sky : I can't stomach the thought of someone else touching your body. Morgan I can't.

Kwalunga : Baby listen to me. There is nobody else

(My phone rang and it was Lonwabo. Wrong timing.)

(I looked at the screen then at Sky)

Sky : Answer it and put it on loud speaker

Kwalunga : No.

Sky : Get out Morgan. Get out!!!!

(She threw everything on the floor. She does that every time when she is angry and I hate it)

Kwalunga : You need to calm the fuck down.

(She threw a pillow at my face.I walked out)

(She screamed)

(I drove to Anthony's house)

Anthony : Lunga. You back

(He was happy to see me)

Kwalunga : Yeah man. How are things going?

Anthony : Aren't you supposed to be home fucking Sky?

Kwalunga : She is crazy today

(Anthony laughed)

Anthony : Women are all crazy

Kwalunga : Sky leads the pack

(He laughed)

Anthony : What did you do this time?

Kwalunga : I fucked up and I need a place to crash. Is my room still available?

Anthony : Any day my man. Spill

Kwalunga : There is another woman

Anthony : I knew it

Kwalunga : It was a once off thing bro.

Anthony : And?

Kwalunga : She won't stop calling.

Anthony : Your dick is always getting you in trouble

Kwalunga : Yeah right.

Anthony : When did you come back?

Kwalunga : Today

Anthony : Have you heard anything from Thomas?

Kwalunga : No. Why?

Anthony : We know about Gadaffi and Ademaro

Kwalunga : Oh yeah?

Anthony : Yep. Ademaro told us everything and Gadaffi is coming for you.

Kwalunga : He tried but he didn't succeed.

Anthony : Bro what do you mean?

Kwalunga : He sent his squad to South Africa and I got arrested.

Anthony : For real?

Kwalunga : They used Leggero to get me arrested and his friend came to see me and they roughed me up

Anthony : That's serious bro. When?

Kwalunga : A couple of days ago.

Anthony : He phoned Ademaro yesterday and told him that he is coming for you.

Kwalunga : Yesterday? Are you sure?

Anthony : Yes. We need to put him behind bars

Kwalunga : No we need to take care of him permanently.

Anthony : Lunga we don't kill. Our job is to put these criminals away

Kwalunga : Gadaffi will never stay behind bars.

Anthony : Not if we call the Russian cops.

Kwalunga : He escaped right under their noses

Anthony : Lunga this guy is going to kill you.

Kwalunga : I will kill him first and he won't see it coming. Do you have food? I'm starving

Anthony : Yeah sure. You are always eating but I don't know where all this food is going. You are getting taller every day instead of getting fat

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Where is Nicola?

Anthony : She got crazy and she left

Kwalunga : She is always crazy but I don't blame her. Dating you is crazy

Anthony : She will come back because she can't resist my dick

Kwalunga : What did you do this time?

Anthony : She found me with another bitch in bed.

Kwalunga : Who is that bitch?

Anthony : I forgot her name.

Kwalunga : Anthony you are fucked up bro.

Anthony : I know that. Let's go and eat.

Kwalunga : Only if Sky knew how much I missed her bro

(My phone rang)

Kwalunga : I hope that's her. (I pulled out my phone from my jeans)

(It's Lonwabo for the 6th time)

Kwalunga : Hi

Anthony : Is it her?

(I shook my head)

Lonwabo : I miss you so much sthandwa sami

(Sthandwa sami?)

Kwalunga : Oh yeah?

Lonwabo : I'm thinking of coming to Italy

Kwalunga : No no. You can't

Lonwabo : Please Lunga. I need to see you.

Kwalunga : I told you what happened between you and I was a mistake. A huge one.

Lonwabo : You don't mean that.

Kwalunga : I do. Thank you for everything you did for me but please stop calling me Nwabo.

Lonwabo : Why don't you allow me to come to Italy so that we can sit down and talk?

Kwalunga : There is nothing to talk about. Sharp we fucked and that was it we need to take care of him permanently.

Anthony : Lunga we don't kill. Our job is to put these criminals away

Kwalunga : Gadaffi will never stay behind bars.

Anthony : Not if we call the Russian cops.

Kwalunga : He escaped right under their noses

Anthony : Lunga this guy is going to kill you.

Kwalunga : I will kill him first and he won't see it coming. Do you have food? I'm starving

Anthony : Yeah sure. You are always eating but I don't know where all this food is going. You are getting taller every day instead of getting fat

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Where is Nicola?

Anthony : She got crazy and she left

Kwalunga : She is always crazy but I don't blame her. Dating you is crazy

Anthony : She will come back because she can't resist my dick

Kwalunga : What did you do this time?

Anthony : She found me with another bitch in bed.

Kwalunga : Who is that bitch?

Anthony : I forgot her name.

Kwalunga : Anthony you are fucked up bro.

Anthony : I know that. Let's go and eat.

Kwalunga : Only if Sky knew how much I missed her bro

(My phone rang)

Kwalunga : I hope that's her. (I pulled out my phone from my jeans)

(It's Lonwabo for the 6th time)

Kwalunga : Hi

Anthony : Is it her?

(I shook my head)

Lonwabo : I miss you so much sthandwa sami

(Sthandwa sami?)

Kwalunga : Oh yeah?

Lonwabo : I'm thinking of coming to Italy

Kwalunga : No no. You can't

Lonwabo : Please Lunga. I need to see you.

Kwalunga : I told you what happened between you and I was a mistake. A huge one.

Lonwabo : You don't mean that.

Kwalunga : I do. Thank you for everything you did for me but please stop calling me Nwabo.

Lonwabo : Why don't you allow me to come to Italy so that we can sit down and talk?

Kwalunga : There is nothing to talk about. Sharp we fucked and that was it nothing more.

Lonwabo : Andikhoni ulibala ngawe Lunga. You are driving me crazy

Kwalunga : Well it's time you stop thinking about me because nothing will ever happen between you and I.

Lonwabo : Please. I need you

Kwalunga : You don't. Please stop

Lonwabo : Ok. Ok fine I'll stop

Kwalunga : Thank you. Look Nwabo You're a beautiful woman but not for me. I have a wife and please respect that Sweetheart

Lonwabo : I love you Kwalunga

Kwalunga : No no You don't. You are just confused. Please forget about me.

(She hung up)

Kwalunga : Yo! Women

Anthony : They will kill you one day Lunga.

Kwalunga : I'm not fucking any woman ever again.

Anthony : After today.

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

Anthony : Some girls are coming over.

Kwalunga : Uyahlanya. I just told you that Sky is angry with me because of some woman.

Anthony : She doesn't have to know. Just a quick fuck and they will go

Kwalunga : Anthony no. I'm not going to fuck anyone

Anthony : Come on bro.

Kwalunga : Call them and cancel everything.
You and I are not fucking anyone today.

Anthony : You like spoiling the fun.

Kwalunga : You need to give Nicola a break
from these women.

Anthony : Maybe you right.

Kwalunga : I'm always right. My food please

(He laughed)

Anthony : What's her name?

Kwalunga : Who?

Anthony : The one who just called you now.

Kwalunga : Oh you mean Lonwabo.She is....

Anthony : Lunga wait. Are you falling for this woman? Is that why you keeping her away?

Kwalunga : No. Why are you saying that?

Anthony : You have a stupid grin on your face

Kwalunga : Sky is the only woman I love Anthony. She is tough like my sunflower Zinzi and I love tough women. Lonwabo is weak and soft. She is like ummm.....I don't know bro but she has that soft touch that tender love. Maybe it's because of our age difference.

Anthony : How old is she?

Kwalunga : 37

(His eyes are wide open)

Anthony : Old women are dangerous in bed bro.

Kwalunga : She knows nothing about all that. She is so innocent bro. The way she screamed and all that It sounded so innocent.

Anthony : Damn. I feel you bro

Kwalunga : I don't want to be with her but I don't want to lose her at the same time. It's crazy.

Anthony : Dude you love this woman. Admit it.

Kwalunga : No no it's not love. It's just something I never felt not after my mother

passed away. I don't even want to fuck her again.

Anthony : Was it that bad?

Kwalunga : Better than Meloni

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : But I wasn't feeling it.

Anthony : But you know your fiancée is crazy and if she finds out about this woman trust me hell will break all loose ends.

(I chuckled)

Kwalunga : I know. Let me try calling her and see if she is still crazy.

(Anthony laughed)

Chapter 53

(The following day I had to go to my house and change my clothes because I needed to go to work.)

(Sky was feeding Unga. I miss my boy so much)

Sky : What are you doing here?

Kwalunga : I'm here to change these clothes. I have a job Sky. Remember?

Sky : And a new bitch.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart please. Let's talk about this thing.

Sky : There's nothing to talk about Morgan.

Kwalunga : Can I hold my son?

Sky : You've been bitching around and touching every pussy? now you want to hold our son? Forget it.

Kwalunga : Fine.

(I went upstairs)

Sky : You have exactly 5 minutes to change and leave this house Morgan.

(I showered at Anthony's house but I showered again and took my time getting dressed. My arm is getting better. 25 minutes later I went downstairs. Sky looked up at the clock and back at me)

Kwalunga : I'm hungry

Sky : There is your breakfast.

Kwalunga : Cereal?

Sky : Take it or leave it Morgan. Let's go my boy

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I miss you. You and our Son.

(I walked closer to her and Legerro)

Sky : Stand right there!!

Kwalunga : Oh fuck it woman!! What do you want me to do?

Sky : To stop fucking every woman that you come across Morgan. Is that too much to ask?

Kwalunga : I told you I didn't fuck anyone. How many times must I tell you that?

Sky : I found you in a parking lot fucking another woman. In a bloody parking lot!!! Do you blame me right now?

(I rubbed my forehead)

Kwalunga : Are you going to bring that up every time we have an argument?

Sky : Who is she Morgan!!!?

Kwalunga : You know what? I'm out of here.

Sky : I hate you Lunga!!!!

Kwalunga : And I love you so much.

Sky : Get out!!!

Kwalunga : Bye Leggero. Your mother is so fuckin crazy.

(I walked out)

(At True Red Investigators. They have a beautiful receptionist now. Things have changed)

Kwalunga : HI

Receptionist : Hi Mr Hlela (She smiled)

Kwalunga : Welcome to Red

Receptionist : Wow. Thank you. Thank you

(She hugged me. What the heck?)

Receptionist : Oh my God I'm so sorry. I'm just so happy to finally see you. My name is Camilla. Camilla Colombo.

Kwalunga : Pleased to meet you Camilla.
Where is everyone else?

Camilla : Oh yes that. They are having a meeting in the boardroom upstairs. Thomas said you must join them as soon as you get here.

Kwalunga : What meeting?.. Never mind.
Thanks Camilla.

Camilla : Yo Welcome

(That sounded so sexy. Anyway let me get to this meeting.)

(I stepped inside our boardroom and sat down quietly)

Thomas : Gadaffi is onto one of us and that means he is onto all of us because at Red we are family and family sticks together. Am I wrong?

No (We said in unison)

Thomas : Good. I'm not sure if some of you have heard about this but Ademaro got himself in trouble and Lunga got him out. Lunga's life is at risk.

(Thomas is pacing around the boardroom)

Tina : What is the plan Tommy?

Thomas : Gadaffi's sister is in town and we all know she is working with Gadaffi

Anthony : Krane is right. She took over the art center that is in Capranica.

Kwalunga : What happened to the owner of the center?

Tina : We don't know but she is no longer there. She just vanished.

Thomas : Then Gadaffi's sister took over just like that. We need more info about this woman Lady and Gentlemen. We need to work really hard to get this bastard. The question is How are we going to do that?

Kwalunga : Leave that to me.

Thomas : No no and No. You are not going there. Over my dead body

Kwalunga : Why not Krane?

Tina : You are the target.

Anthony : Exactly. You can't go there.

Kwalunga : Ok fine.

Thomas : Thank you. Ademaro is working for Gadaffi again and in that way we'll know exactly what Gadaffi is up to and his next move.

Tina : That is going to work.

Anthony : Definitely

(They were all staring at me)

Kwalunga : Yeah maybe.

Thomas : Lunga you need to be careful and make sure that Leggero and Sky are safe.

Kwalunga : Yeah sure.

Thomas : Meeting adjourned.

(We left Tina and Thomas in the boardroom.
They are probably fucking)

Camilla : Hi Lunga.

(Jesus! What is wrong with her)

Kwalunga : Hi Cammy

Camilla : I ordered lunch for you.

(Anthony rolled his eyes and I laughed)

Kwalunga : Thanks sweetheart.

(We went to my office)

Anthony : She wants you Lunga.

Kwalunga : She is just being nice

Anthony : She wants your dick

Kwalunga : She wants to be my friend.

Anthony : Her fuck buddy.

Kwalunga : Her friend Anthony Just friend.
Anyway I'm going ahead with my plan

Anthony : What plan?

Kwalunga : About Gadaffi's sister and you won't say a word to anybody.

Anthony : Ah! Lunga we spoke about this bro.

Kwalunga : I know and I'm not going to sit around and wait for Ademaro.

Anthony : What is your plan?

Kwalunga : I'm working on it. Any new cases?

Anthony : Gadaffi is our only priority right now.

Kwalunga : I see.

Anthony : Don't do anything stupid Lunga.

Kwalunga : I won't. I need to go somewhere

Anthony : Where?

Kwalunga : Somewhere. I'll be back before lunch

(I took my jacket and walked out to my car)

(The house of Arte. Beautiful place. I stepped in)

Kwalunga : Hi

Lady : Welcome sir

(I looked around and some painted picture that was hanging on the wall caught my attention)

Kwalunga : Morgan. Morgan Khumalo

Lady : Hi. I'm Anya

Kwalunga : Anya. This place is beautiful

Anya : I know. These kids are doing a great job

Kwalunga : Kids?

(I asked while looking at the picture)

Anya : Yes. From the shelter

Kwalunga : They do all this?

Anya : Yes. Can you believe it?

Kwalunga : Can I touch that?

Anya : Of course.

(It's a picture of a boy with a dog standing in the middle of a burning house. Tears are running down his face.)

Kwalunga : Who did this?

(She is staring at my gloves)

Kwalunga : Don't worry about that.

Anya : I'm not. What were you saying?

Kwalunga : This. Who did this?

Anya : Just some boy from the shelter in Navona.

Kwalunga : He is good. Really good. How much is it?

Anya : All these are sold out. We are just waiting for the buyers to come and pick them up.

Kwalunga : Give it to me. I'll double the amount.

Anya : Phew! Really?

Kwalunga : Please Ms.....

Anya : Fedorov

(Anya Fedorov. This is Gadaffi's sister)

Kwalunga : Ms Fedorov. Please I need this one.

Anya : I'll see what I can do Mr Kumalo. We need all the money we can get for the shelter.

Kwalunga : I know.

Anya : This one costs a fortune Mr Kumalo.

Kwalunga : Send me your invoice and I will make a transfer.

Anya : Oh!. Ok give me a couple of days.

Kwalunga : I can do that. See you in a few days then.

(I head out to the door)

Anya : Morgan?

Kwalunga : Yeah?

Anya : Please stay for coffee

(I smiled and raised one eyebrow before I turned around)

Kwalunga : I don't drink coffee

Anya : Juice..... Water?

(She laughed)

Kwalunga : Juice will be great.

Anya : Please follow me to my office

(I followed her. Her office is big. There were some drawings and paintings all over her desk)

Anya : Sorry about the mess

Kwalunga : Do you draw?

Anya : I try (She laughed)

(She is beautiful. Nothing like Gadaffi)

Kwalunga : Where is the other lady who used to work here? She is really sweet

(I lied. I don't even know her)

Anya : She..... She is in New York but she will be back soon.

Kwalunga : I see.

(She gave me juice)

Anya : What is it with you and that painting?

Kwalunga : Let's just say it's close to my heart.

(I took a sip)

Anya : How?

Kwalunga : Can we not talk about it?

Anya : Yeah of course. I don't even know what I'm doing here and it's quite. I feel lonely.

Kwalunga : Yeah?

Anya : I'm from Russia and my brother offered me a job here. He is so....(She paused)

Kwalunga : You don't want to be here. Do you?

(She shook her head)

Anya : I don't. I miss my mother and my friends back in Russia.

Kwalunga : Then why are you here?

Anya : Because my brother is a selfish bastard. Always on a mission to ruin other people's lives.

(You can tell she is Russian with the way she speaks English. I can listen to her all day)

Kwalunga : Too bad

Anya : ya znayu (I know)

(She is starting with her Russian. She can't find out that I understand Russian)

Kwalunga : I didn't get that.

Anya : Oh sorry about that. Can we go out and have lunch?

(This is not a good idea)

Kwalunga : I don't know Anya. I don't want your brother to kill me

Anya : No don't worry. He is in Venice. I'm just waiting for him to get back and tell me exactly why I'm here.

(She knows nothing about me. At least not yet but I'm not taking chances)

Kwalunga : Ok. Let's go

Anya : I need to call a cab. I Don't have a car

(She laughed)

Kwalunga : No worries. Mine is outside

Anya : Good. Let me get my bag. Tell me more about yourself Morgan.

Kwalunga : I'm from Nigeria (I lied)

Anya : Really? Wow I want you to meet someone. Come with me

(We walked out and there was a lady standing in their studio)

Kwalunga : Yeah really.

Anya : Bolade I'm going out for a few minutes but before I do I want you to meet someone.

(Holy shit! what have I gotten myself into?)

Anya : Please meet Morgan. Morgan meet Bolade she is also from Nigeria.

(Bolade smiled. God I hope she doesn't speak Urhobo because I'll be in deep shit)

Bolade : Bawo ni o se wa? (How are you)

(She is from Yorubaland. That's my girl)

Kwalunga : mo wa dada (I'm fine)

Bolade : Inu mi dun lati pade yin (I'm pleased to meet you)

Kwalunga : Emi na (Me too)

(Please don't say anything else)

Bolade : Kini o nse bini? (What are you doing here?)

Kwalunga : Gbiyanju lati no owo (Trying to make money)

Bolade : mo mo (I know) Nigba ti o ti wa ni bo pada? (When are you going back?)

Kwalunga : Emi ki mo (I don't know)

(Anya laughed)

Anya : Ok that's enough. I'm jealous now.

(Thank you Anya)

Bolade : I tried to teach you Anya.

Anya : I know. Morgan you see Bolade here she does amazing things with her hands. I'm

glad she agreed to come with me from Russia.

Kwalunga : The Yoruba tribe have traditionally been among the most skilled and productive craftsmen of Africa so yeah I believe you.

Anya : True. I'll show you her work later. It is so amazing. From glassmaking to wood carving and when it comes to paint you don't want to know.

Kwalunga : Wow. I need to see that.

Bolade : Morgan please promise me that you will be back soon.

(I smiled)

Kwalunga : I will. I promise

Bolade : I'll make a piece for you.

(I looked at the picture that was hanging on the wall one more time. I can't keep my eyes away from it. I touched and ran my hand over it)

Anya : On eto lyubit (He loves it)

Bolade : Ser'yezno? (For real?)

Anya : YA skazal yemu chto eto dorogo (I told him it's expensive)

Bolade : Pust' platit za eto (Let him pay for it)

(They think I don't understand Russian. Shame)

Kwalunga : Can we go now?

Anya : Yes please. Bola later

Bolade : Have fun.

(We drove straight to the restaurant down the road)

Kwalunga : Why are you saying you are lonely here when you have a friend?

Anya : You mean Bolade?

Kwalunga : Yes

Anya : Bolade is one of those people who.....

(She paused when our food arrived)

Anya : Thanks (She said to a waitress)

Kwalunga : She is what?

Anya : Nomophobia. Always on her phone. She knows almost every single thing that happens around the world

Kwalunga : Oh yeah?

Anya : That's how she found me. She was a huge fan of my work and she followed me on Facebook. She sent me pictures of her work and I said let me give her a chance.

Kwalunga : That's interesting

Anya : I know. I asked how she was going to make it to Russia and she was like give me a job and I will make a plan.

Kwalunga : And she made it to Russia?

Anya : Yes. She is so driven. When she wants something she doesn't hesitate to go for it.

Kwalunga : So you have a studio in Russia?

Anya : Yes. A beautiful one.

Kwalunga : Who is running it now? Since you are here?

Anya : My sister. Ekaterina

Kwalunga : I see and your brother does he have any kids?

Anya : Ivan? No he doesn't.

Kwalunga : Ok

(There was suddenly a storm outside and it was raining)

Anya : We need to go. Bolade is scared of the storm

(I laughed)

Anya : What about you?

Kwalunga : I love it.

Anya : Oh my God me too. The lightning is just so beautiful.

Kwalunga : I know.

Anya : I'm sorry but we really have to go.

(I checked my watch and I was late for work.
I promised Anthony that I'd be back before
lunch)

Anya : It's fine. I will call a cab.

Kwalunga : No no. It's fine I'll take you back.
Let's go

(We got outside and she brushed her arms.
She was wearing a vest)

Kwalunga : Here. Take my jacket

(I gave it to her)

Anya : Thank you. You smell good and I love
it

(She smiled)

(We went back and The house of Arte was closed. I was wet from the rain)

Anya : Bolade has gone home.

Kwalunga : Do you blame her?

(She laughed)

Anya : No I don't.

(She hung my jacket)

Anya : Coffee? This bra is killing me.

(I leaned on a table with my legs crossed)

Kwalunga : No. Thanks

(She took off her bra and sighed)

Anya : Now I can breathe.

(She laughed. Her hard nipples were just there. She took the frames from the wall)

Anya : I'll just take these to my office then I'll lock up

Kwalunga : Is it not safe to leave them hanging?

Anya : I don't know. I just don't trust this place. Where are my keys?

(She searched for keys on the table that I was leaning on. Her breasts were on my face. She was breathing in my ear. I closed my eyes and before I knew it her lips were on mine)

Anya : I'm sorry about that. I don't know what I was thinking.

(She turned around walking away from me. I grabbed her arm and pulled her closer to my face. She couldn't look at me)

Kwalunga : Ngizokuhlaba ungakholwa mina ngane yabantu. (I whispered)

(The storm got heavy. I suck her neck while running my fingers on her wet hair. She pulled me by arm and we went to her office. Everything that was on her desk was on the floor immediately and I was kissing her neck down to her breast. Her legs were wide open and her swollen clit was just there. She moaned while pulling me closer. she wanted me to be inside her so badly. I stepped back. I still had all my clothes on and she was fully naked.)

Anya : Morgan please.

Kwalunga : Please what?

Anya : Fuck me. I want you

Kwalunga : No

(She was literally crying for my dick. What the fuck?)

Anya : I'm begging you.

(I went down with my tongue and my fingers instead of my dick. I worked my magic and when she was about to cum. I walked out took my jacket and I went out to my car)

(I had her. Not how I planned it but this is better)

Chapter 54

(It was already late and I couldn't go back to work. The rain was heavy. I arrived at my main gate and it was closed. I called Sky a couple of times to open up for me but she didn't pick up her phone and I assumed the worst. I quickly got out of my car and jumped over the gate. I ran to my house only to find Sky cooking. I just stood there with my sopping clothes from the rain. Sky is more crazy than I thought. My phone rang and I pulled it out)

Kwalunga : Caldo (I Answered)

(Sky was trying to hide her laughter from me. She saw me climbing over the gate and I'm she did all this on purpose)

Anthony : What the hell happened to you?

Kwalunga : I was working on the investigation and it took me longer than I thought it would.

Anthony : You owe me.

(Sky was undressing my dripping wet clothes with her eyes until her eyes landed on my arm and her eyes were wide open.)

Kwalunga : Did Thomas give you any problems?

(Sky went back to her cooking)

Anthony : You know Krane is overprotective when it comes to you.

Kwalunga : He needs to stop treating me like a small boy.

Anthony : Did you go to the house of Arte?

Kwalunga : I did.

Anthony : And?

Kwalunga : Caldo can we do this tomorrow?

Anthony : Yeah sure

(I hung up and looked at Sky)

Kwalunga : Is there a problem with our main gate?

Sky : Not that I know of any. What happened to your arm?

(She is worried about my arm but she is trying so hard to act like she doesn't care.)

Kwalunga : It's not like you care anyway.

(I opened the main gate and I went to get my car and parked it inside my garage)

(I went upstairs and she followed me)

Sky : Baby?

Kwalunga : Yes Sky

Sky : Please let me see your arm. What happened? Who did this to you?

Kwalunga : It's nothing serious Sky. I told you I was arrested but you didn't believe me. now please excuse me I need to shower after

I spend hours in the rain because you couldn't open the gate for me. Right?

Sky : Hours? Ok ok Baby I'm sorry. Please forgive me my love.

(I went to the bathroom and took a shower. I finished and walked back to our room naked. Sky swallowed hard)

Kwalunga : I didn't know that you are still here. Sorry

Sky : Baby it's me Sky. Your fiancée

(Oh the tables are turned now)

Kwalunga : Why is my fiancée abusing me?

(I got dressed and she stopped me)

Sky : I missed you baby. I missed you so much

(Fuck! I missed you too but you know how to piss me off)

Kwalunga : You said I must go. Where is my son?

Sky : He is sleeping. I was angry Morgan and I didn't mean it.

(She started kissing my chest up to my neck.)

Kwalunga : I need to go since I'm not welcome here.

Sky : I need that dick before you go.

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Come here.

(I made love to her. I missed this and after we were done she just lay on my chest)

Sky : Who did that to your arm?

Kwalunga : It happened when I was arrested. Anything can happen behind those walls sweetheart.

Sky : I'm sorry baby about the way I spoke to you. I'm just so jealous

Kwalunga : I know and I love you still.

Sky : Fuck m.....

(Leggero was crying in his room)

Sky : Come on boy just hang in there.

Kwalunga : Forget about sex. Your son needs you.

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : I'll check on him. Just relax

Sky : Ok baby

(I went to check on Unga and he was crying)

Kwalunga : Come here boy boy. (I picked him up)

(He smelled so good)

Kwalunga : I missed you so much my son

(He was quite now)

Sky : Baby bring him here

Kwalunga : We are coming

(I took Unga's toy and went back to my bedroom.)

Sky : Hello my baby. You awake now jaaah.

(She mimics a baby voice. She is so good with babies)

Kwalunga : We need to have another one soon since you are very good with this

(I laughed and she faked a smile. She seemed uncomfortable suddenly)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart are you ok?

Sky : Yes. I'll go and prepare supper for us downstairs

(She walked out and I placed Unga on my chest. My eyes were heavy and I quickly fell asleep)

Sky : Baby?

(I slowly opened my eyes and Unga was still on my chest fast asleep.)

Kwalunga : Shit! We fell asleep. What time is it? (My voice was husky. How long did I sleep?)

Sky : 19h30. Please come and eat

(Her eyes were red and puffy. My heart started racing. I placed Unga down and got out of bed)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart what happened?

(I held her head with my both hands and forced her to look at me. She started crying again. I pulled her to my chest)

Sky : Baby I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : It's ok sweetheart

(I don't know what is ok but I just want her to stop crying)

Sky : It's not ok Morgan

(She moved from my chest and started pacing the room)

Sky : When I walked in here..... seeing you and Leggero sleeping like that I..... Just... I Just. It just reminded me that I'll never be able to give you that.

Kwalunga : What sweetheart?

Sky : A baby of your own.

Kwalunga : What?

(I couldn't believe it)

Sky : I will never be able to give you kids because I'm infertile.

Kwalunga : Are you serious?

(She was sobbing)

Sky : Please don't leave me Morgan. Please baby.

Kwalunga : No no I won't leave you Sky. Come here.

(I pulled her back to my chest and squeezed her in my arms. I'm shocked but there is no way I'm leaving Sky because she can't get pregnant)

Kwalunga : I love you sweetheart and I'm not going anywhere.

Sky : I'm sorry Morgan.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart look at me. You don't owe me anything and you don't have to be sorry. Sky you didn't choose to be infertile oh fuck even if you did I'd still love you the same way I love you now.

(She smiled)

Sky : Thank you Lunga. I love you so much.

Kwalunga : Let's go and eat Your man is hungry

(I wanted this conversation to be over)

Sky : Pick me up

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Since when you can't walk Your man is hungry

(I wanted this conversation to be over)

Sky : Pick me up

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Since when you can't walk sweetheart?

Kwalunga : Since my man is here.

(I laughed and picked her up. I walked with her downstairs)

(AT TRUE RED)

(Camilla wasn't at the reception. I needed to see Anthony first before I start working. I went to my office first to leave my laptop. The door was closed and I opened. I stepped in only to find Anthony fucking Camilla. They don't even see me standing there)

Kwalunga : What the fuck is going on in this company?

(Anthony pulled out quickly and Camilla was fixing herself up)

Anthony : Bro I'm sorry.

Kwalunga : In my office Anthony? Why?

Anthony : I'll explain. Camilla please leave

(Camilla ran out quickly)

Kwalunga : I'm not going to use this office today. I'll use yours and you take this one

Anthony : Lunga I'm sorry bro. It's fine you can use mine.

Kwalunga : Why in my office Anthony? Why?

Anthony : She was actually here for you and I found her touching herself sitting on your chair. One thing led to another and yeah you saw what you saw

Kwalunga : She was waiting for me here?

Anthony : I told you that she wants your dick and you said no she just wants a friend.

(I tried so much not to laugh but I couldn't. I burst)

Kwalunga : So you had sex with a woman who was waiting for me in my office to have sex w.....You know what? Nevermind. Did you guys cum?

(He laughed and shook his head)

Kwalunga : Did you go anywhere near my chair?

Anthony : She did. I found her masturbating on your chair

Kwalunga : Yeses! this woman is crazy. So if it was Thomas who walked in on her then I was going to find her with Thomas here I guess.

Anthony : You and Thomas don't know when to have fun. He was probably gonna fire her.

Kwalunga : I doubt.

Anthony : She was like no I'm waiting for Lunga and I said Lunga is not here I am so let's do this.

(I laughed this really sounds like a joke but it isn't. These people are not normal I swear to God)

Kwalunga : I'm glad you got yourself a quick fuck but I wonder how is she going to look at me after this.

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : I met Gadaffi's sister yesterday.
Anya Fedorov

Anthony : No kiddings bro. This shit is serious

Kwalunga : I mean it. We went for lunch and we did other things. Now I just need to do my research on this Anya Fedorov

(I took out my laptop)

Anthony : What do you mean other things?

Kwalunga : Adult things. Did Thomas ask you anything about me?

Anthony : Adult things? Are you telling me what I think you are telling me?

Kwalunga : It depends what your mind is telling you about what I'm telling you.

Anthony : You fucked Gadaffi's sister?

Kwalunga : Gadaffi's sister wanted me to fuck her. Anyway I saw something so beautiful there and I want to buy it. Yesterday I almost fucked up and gave her my email address for the invoice.

Anthony : You lied about your name again?

Kwalunga : Yeah I'm Morgan Khumalo. I need to go back there today and find out if I can pay for it with cash.

Anthony : I'm coming with you today.

Kwalunga : No You are going to stay here and investigate this Anya Fedorov and ensure that Thomas doesn't follow me.

Anthony : Yeah right. This is boring

Kwalunga : I know and I don't care. Check her Facebook page as well.

(Thomas walked in with his eyes wide open)

Thomas : Fedorov is coming to Rome tomorrow to kill Lunga

Anthony : Oh No! Please don't say that Thomas. What are we going to do?

(I chuckled)

Kwalunga : You guys worry too much. Nothing is going to happen to me

Thomas : Lunga we are talking about a man who escaped from prison. A murderer

Kwalunga : Krane I don't care. Guys I need to see someone before Gadaffi kills me (I laughed)

Thomas : This is not a joke Lunga!!!!

Anthony : Lunga thinks everything is a joke. Lunga someone is coming to kill you tomorrow. Do you understand that? We are going to lose you. All of us

Kwalunga : Ok ok I'm scared. Can I go now?

(I laughed)

Anthony : You can't go out anymore.

Thomas : Exactly. We need to be together all the time from now

Kwalunga : Are you guys serious?

Thomas : Yes Lunga

Kwalunga : Gadaffi is coming tomorrow so please allow me to go.

Thomas : Ok fine. I'm giving you 2 hours to go and come back.

Anthony : And if you don't then we will send the cops to....

(He paused and quickly looked at Thomas. You almost fucked up Anthony)

Thomas : To where?

Anthony : To wherever he is going.

Kwalunga : Make it 3 hours Thomas. I'm out of here

Chapter 55

(Suffocate called me as I got to my car)

Kwalunga : Padre

Suffocate : Figlio

Kwalunga : Are you good?

Suffocate : I'm in prison Per l'amaro di Dio
(for God's sake) Are you good?

(I took a deep breath)

Kwalunga : I'm dealing with something

Suffocate : Are you in trouble?

Kwalunga : Some Russian is coming for me.

Suffocate : Russian?

Kwalunga : Yep but it's nothing for you to
worry about. I'll handle it

Suffocate : You don't know Russians as much
as I do.

Kwalunga : Suffo I'll handle it

Suffocate : I have to go

(He hung up)

(I don't even know why he called me. I arrived at House of Arte)

Anya : Morgan

Kwalunga : Anya

Anya : Bolade is not here

Kwalunga : I'm not here for Bolade. I'm here for this picture.

(I pointed at the picture on the wall)

(She looked different. Is it about what we did yesterday or did she find out about me?)

Anya : Take it

Kwalunga : Just like that?

Anya : Yeah. Just like that

Kwalunga : Can I pay cash for it?

Anya : Why?

Kwalunga : I don't like people who answer my question with another question.

Anya : Are you scared that I'll find out about who you really are?

(I froze)

Kwalunga : No. I have nothing to hide about myself

Anya : Then why did you lie about your name?

(Silence. I saw this coming but not so fast)

Anya : Kalunga Hela. That is your real name right?

Kwalunga : Yeah my name is Kwalunga Hlela and I'm from South Africa

(It's time to come clean once and for all)

Anya : You didn't have to lie to me

Kwalunga : Why did your brother send you here?

Anya : To let him know as soon as you come back from South Africa.

Kwalunga : And when did you find out about me?

Anya : Before you came here yesterday but when you told me that you were from Nigeria and the way you spoke the Yoruba language I thought maybe we were wrong.

Kwalunga : You and who? Anya who told you about me?

Anya : Camilla told me everything

Kwalunga : Camilla. Camilla Colombo?

Anya : Ekaterina Fedorov. She is Ekaterina Federov not Camilla

Kwalunga : She lied to us. Oh my God she lied but you said Ekaterina is in Russia taking care of your business

Anya : I lied. Just like you lied to me about your true identity

(I slowly reached for my gun)

Anya : Don't do it Morgan. If I wanted you dead then you would be dead by now

Kwalunga : Fuck! (I muttered)

Anya : Take the picture and go. Go home and take your wife and your son. Just go back to South Africa and never look back because I can assure you that Ivan is going to kill you.

Kwalunga : Why are you doing this?

(She sighs)

Anya : When you walked in here yesterday. I fell in love instead of fear and I wanted to protect you instead of killing you. You don't deserve what Ivan is planning to do with you

(She rubbed her eyes)

Kwalunga : What is he planning to do with me?

Anya : I don't know but what I know is that today might be the last day I'm seeing you. Please go Morgan and Please take care of yourself.

(She pressed a framed picture on my chest.
Tears running down her face)

Kwalunga : I'm not going to die Anya.I've been through worse and I told myself that I would protect myself from anything. I am The Stoic Anya. I carried my emotions all my life and the moment I poured them all out I knew shit was about to go down. I've been protecting myself from the age of 16 so I'm not scared. The only person you should be worried about is your brother because I don't run away from my demons

Sponsored

I face them head on. Thank you for the picture

(I headed out)

Anya : Kalunga?

Kwalunga : Yeah

Anya : I like you and I don't want to lose you and if there is anything I can do to help you please let me know

Kwalunga : There is.

Anya : Name it.

Kwalunga : Find a boy who painted this picture and bring him to me.

(I walked out)

(I can't believe what happened? How can Thomas be so dumb. He just hired someone without doing a background check. I was fuming walking in at the Red reception and Ekaterina was not there. I went to Thomas's office)

Kwalunga : Call a meeting now.

Thomas : What the fuck is wrong with you?

Kwalunga : What the fuck is wrong with me?
What the-fuck - is wrong with me? Krane
what the fuck is wrong with you?

Thomas : What are you talking about?

Kwalunga : Anthony!!! Tina!!!

Thomas : Stop screaming. I will call them

(Tina and Anthony rushed in)

Tina : Who died?

Kwalunga : Who is Camilla Colombo?

Anthony : She is our receptionist bro

Kwalunga : Where is she?

Anthony : She went to buy lunch.

Kwalunga : No she is gone

Thomas : What do you mean?

Kwalunga : Krane who hired that bitch?

Thomas : I did

Kwalunga : How much do you know about her?

Thomas : Red needed a receptionist and Camilla was available. She is just a receptionist Lunga and there's nothing I needed to know about her except her name.

Kwalunga : She fooled all of us. Her name is Ekaterina Fedorov

Thomas : It doesn't matter what her name is.

Kwalunga : She is fuckin Gadaffi's sister
Thomas!!!!

What? (They asked in unison)

Kwalunga : I'm going home to my wife and my son.

Thomas : I'm going to kill this bitch

Kwalunga : She is gone Thomas.

(I walked out and we checked the reception.
It was empty Ekaterina took all her stuff
and she left. I was)

(I went to my house and I found a man in my garage. He was wearing a black leather jacket that touched his ankles and his back was facing me. He was smoking. I reached for my gun and pointed at him)

Man : Lower that gun and listen to me

Kwalunga : Who the fuck are you?

Man : I heard about the Russians.

Kwalunga : That's none of your business

Man : You need me Kwalunga.

Kwalunga : No I don't. How did you get in?

Man : That is not important. I want to know how you are going to protect yourself from the Russians.

(I lowered my gun and he turned around.)

Man : Good.

(He puffed his cigarette in the air and smashed the remaining half of it on the ground with his boot.)

Man : Talk

Kwalunga : Who sent you here?

(I don't know but my voice is becoming husky. I'm getting old for real)

Man : Suffocate sent me here.

Kwalunga : I see

Man : Tell me about your plan. We need to get rid of those motherfuckers

(I'm silent. I don't trust this guy)

Man : Asihambe siyobulala lezinja Hlela.

(He is speaking isiZulu)

Kwalunga : Ungubani wena?

Man : My name is Nazareth Gumbi

(He gave me his hand. I looked at him straight into his eyes and we shook hands)

Chapter 56

(We walked inside my house and Sky froze)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart are you ok?

Sky : What is he doing here Morgan?

Nazareth : Suffocate's princess. How are you?

Sky : Morgan what is he doing here? Morgan call the police. He can't be here

(Nazareth laughed)

Nazareth : Hhai ngiyabona ukuthi kusahlanya lokhu namanje.

Kwalunga : Nazare please stop. Sky listen to me Sweetheart

Nazareth : Nibhebha nabaqwayizi Madlula?
Yeeeer kubi!!

(This Nazareth guy is starting to irritate me)

Kwalunga : Nazareth!!!! Don't you dare speak like that about my wife. Do you understand me?

(He raised his hands in surrender)

Nazareth : Ok fine.

Kwalunga : Now I am going upstairs to speak to my wife and you are going to sit here and wait for me.

(He chuckled)

Nazareth : Whatever.

(Sky and I went upstairs to our bedroom)

Sky : Please explain to me Morgan.

Kwalunga : He is here to help me with something. Your father sent him here

Sky : Are you in trouble Morgan?

Kwalunga : Nothing I can't handle sweetheart and I told your dad that I would handle it but he sent Nazareth.

Sky : Trust me if my dad sent Nazareth here it means that shit is big. Are we going to die? Oh my God Leggero. Our Leggero is not safe.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart calm down.

Sky : No Morgan there is no time to calm down. Take us to Anthony's house.

(She started packing. Why is Sky panicking so much?)

Kwalunga : Nothing is going to happen to you or Le....

Sky : Who wants to kill you Morgan?

Kwalunga : Some Russians.

Sky : That's it. You're taking us to Anthony's house now. Now Morgan!!!

Kwalunga : Fine.

Sky : You need to go to Vietnam for a few days. You will stay with my.... No that's not going to work. Go to South Africa

Kwalunga : I'm not going anywhere
Sweetheart.

Sky : This is not the time for you to be
stubborn. Morgan I love you and I don't want
to lose you. Leggero and I need you so
please!!!

Kwalunga : Are you done packing?

Sky : Yes. I'll go and get Leggero from his
room.

Kwalunga : You are going to Thomas's house
not Anthony's.

Sky : Why?

Kwalunga : Because Anthony can't keep his.....
Because I say so.

Sky : Whatever Morgan. I told you that I hate your job and I'm sure now you know why I said that.

(I took out my phone and called Thomas)

Kwalunga : Krane. I need a favor

Thomas : Anything

Kwalunga : My wife doesn't feel safe here and she wants to be away for a few days.

Thomas : She can't leave Rome it's not safe. You guys can come and stay with us.

Kwalunga : I'll bring them.

Thomas : No. I will come. You can't go out

Kwalunga : Ok

Thomas : I have a room for you guys and you can stay as long as you want.

Kwalunga : I'm not leaving my house Krane. Only Sky and Leggero are coming.

Thomas : You are very stubborn and I hate it.

Kwalunga : I know.

(I hung up)

Sky : Baby are you sure that you are going to be fine?

Kwalunga : Yes sweetheart

(She is weeping)

Sky : We can't lose you Morgan.

Kwalunga : You won't.

(She hugged me and I kissed the top of her head)

Sky : I love you.

Kwalunga : Can you not tell Thomas anything about Nazareth? Can we keep it between us?

Sky : Of course baby. I won't say a word.

Kwalunga : Tomorrow I'm using your car not mine.

Sky : You hate my car though but I think it better for you to use it especially since you have people who want to kill you.

Kwalunga : I'm not trying to hide. Your car is just easily replaceable.

Sky : What do you mean?

Kwalunga : Nothing.

(I went to Unga's room and picked him up from his bed)

Kwalunga : I'm going to miss you Son.

(I pressed my lips on his forehead)

Kwalunga : But I promise you that I will defeat everyone and everything that is meant to destroy us.

(My phone rang)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart. Thomas is here

Sky : Kiss me Morgan. Hold me baby

(I placed Unga down and I gave Sky a long kiss and I held her in my arms)

Kwalunga : I love you.

Sky : I love you too baby. Please take care of yourself.

(Sky and Leggero were gone and it was just me and Nazareth)

Kwalunga : Are you hungry?

Nazareth : Angizidli lezintambo zala e Italy mina. I am a Zulu man

(He means spaghetti. This man has to go soon. I just can't deal with him)

Kwalunga : How do you know about Suffocate?

Nazareth : He is a very good friend of mine. We come a long way. We met when we were arrested in Germany and we became friends. Close friends

Kwalunga : I see and how often do you go to South Africa.

Nazareth : Every month. I have 2 wives and children back home.

Kwalunga : 2 wives?

Nazareth : I am a Zulu man Hlela.

Kwalunga : You really are. What do you guys do exactly?

Nazareth : Anything you want us to do. We are available for any kind of dangerous work. We are not scared of getting our hands dirty.

Kwalunga : I see. Don't tell Suffocate that his daughter is with me.

Nazareth : Akazi ukuthi ubhebha ingane yakhe?

(Can he just stop saying that?)

Kwalunga : He doesn't know.

Nazareth : Isaqwayiza?

Kwalunga : No Nazare. She stopped doing that long ago.

Nazareth : Good. Suffocate owes you. You saved his daughter

Sponsored

it's not safe. You guys can come and stay with us.

Kwalunga : I'll bring them.

Thomas : No. I will come. You can't go out

Kwalunga : Ok

Thomas : I have a room for you guys and you can stay as long as you want.

Kwalunga : I'm not leaving my house Krane. Only Sky and Leggero are coming.

Thomas : You are very stubborn and I hate it.

Kwalunga : I know.

(I hung up)

Sky : Baby are you sure that you are going to be fine?

Kwalunga : Yes sweetheart

(She is weeping)

Sky : We can't lose you Morgan.

Kwalunga : You won't.

(She hugged me and I kissed the top of her head)

Sky : I love you.

Kwalunga : Can you not tell Thomas anything about Nazareth? Can we keep it between us?

Sky : Of course baby. I won't say a word.

Kwalunga : Tomorrow I'm using your car not mine.

Sky : You hate my car though but I think it better for you to use it especially since you have people who want to kill you.

Kwalunga : I'm not trying to hide. Your car is just easily replaceable.

Sky : What do you mean?

Kwalunga : Nothing.

(I went to Unga's room and picked him up from his bed)

Kwalunga : I'm going to miss you Son.

(I pressed my lips on his forehead)

Kwalunga : But I promise you that I will defeat everyone and everything that is meant to destroy us.

(My phone rang)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart. Thomas is here

Sky : Kiss me Morgan. Hold me baby

(I placed Unga down and I gave Sky a long kiss and I held her in my arms)

Kwalunga : I love you.

Sky : I love you too baby. Please take care of yourself.

(Sky and Leggero were gone and it was just me and Nazareth)

Kwalunga : Are you hungry?

Nazareth : Angizidli lezintambo zala e Italy mina. I am a Zulu man

(He means spaghetti. This man has to go soon. I just can't deal with him)

Kwalunga : How do you know about Suffocate?

Nazareth : He is a very good friend of mine. We come a long way. We met when we were arrested in Germany and we became friends. Close friends

Kwalunga : I see and how often do you go to South Africa.

Nazareth : Every month. I have 2 wives and children back home.

Kwalunga : 2 wives?

Nazareth : I am a Zulu man Hlela.

Kwalunga : You really are. What do you guys do exactly?

Nazareth : Anything you want us to do. We are available for any kind of dangerous work.

We are not scared of getting our hands dirty.

Kwalunga : I see. Don't tell Suffocate that his daughter is with me.

Nazareth : Akazi ukuthi ubhebha ingane yakhe?

(Can he just stop saying that?)

Kwalunga : He doesn't know.

Nazareth : Isaqwayiza?

Kwalunga : No Nazare. She stopped doing that long ago.

Nazareth : Good. Suffocate owes you. You saved his daughter She was fucked up and I

thought she was going to die. I tried to save her but I failed.

Kwalunga : Ngiyamthanda kakhulu.

Nazareth : I see that. Windoda Hlela.

Kwalunga : I try.

Nazareth : I brought guns.

Kwalunga : Guns?

Nazareth : Yes. Is it clear outside?

Kwalunga : Sure

Nazareth : Come with me

Chapter 57

(I followed him to my garage and he opened a big black back and took out a big gun)

Nazareth : Yabona yi siphethe ezama Russia imishini eyishintshayo. Ikuravaza ikushiye uyi mince.

(He cocked his big gun)

Nazareth : Uyayizwa? iyanxapha. Izulu leli Hlela

Kwalunga : How did you get in with these guns?

Nazareth : It doesn't matter now. Does it?

(I shook my head)

Nazareth : Hold it.

Kwalunga : No. I don't need a gun Nazare

Nazareth : What do you mean?

(I opened my old fridge that was in my garage)

Kwalunga : I need this

Nazareth : Petrol?

Kwalunga : Yes. Petrol

Nazareth : What's your plan Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : Very simple. You will follow Gadaffi everywhere he goes. I want to know where he is and what he is doing.

Nazareth : But I'm taking my guns with me everywhere I go.

Kwalunga : No problem. Let's go and get some sleep. Tomorrow is a big day

(We laughed)

(The following day I woke up and I used Sky's car to go to work. Nazareth left my house in the middle of the night.)

Kwalunga : Thomas how is my wife and Legerro?

Thomas : They are fine. Your son kept us awake last night.

Kwalunga : Is he sick?

Thomas : No he didn't want to sleep.

Kwalunga : I miss him so much.

(His phone rang)

Thomas : Ademaro what's up?

(silence)

Thomas : When?

(Silence)

Thomas : Ok thanks (He hung up)

Kwalunga : What's going on?

Thomas : Gadaffi has left Venice. Lunga we need to call the Russian police

Kwalunga : There is no need for that.

Thomas : What do you mean?

Kwalunga : I will handle Gadaffi. Please trust me

Thomas : How Lunga? How?

(My phone vibrated with a message)

" I found Gadaffi. We are coming to Rome. Nazare" message read.

(Nazareth went to Venice?)

Thomas : Lunga who was that?

Kwalunga : My sister (I lied)

(If I tell them about my plan they might fuck things up for me)

Thomas : Oh ok

Kwalunga : Thomas please go home and make sure that my wife and my son are safe.

Thomas : Yeah yeah sure. What are you going to do?

Kwalunga : I have a plan. Gadaffi will be taken care of

Thomas : If there is anything we can do please don't hesitate to contact me.

Kwalunga : I know.

(I was nervous. What if my plan doesn't work? I can't die. I just can't)

Thomas : Anthony and Tina are gone home already. Are you....

Kwalunga : Please go

Sponsored

Lunga? How?

(My phone vibrated with a message)

" I found Gadaffi. We are coming to Rome. Nazare" message read.

(Nazareth went to Venice?)

Thomas : Lunga who was that?

Kwalunga : My sister (I lied)

(If I tell them about my plan they might fuck things up for me)

Thomas : Oh ok

Kwalunga : Thomas please go home and make sure that my wife and my son are safe.

Thomas : Yeah yeah sure. What are you going to do?

Kwalunga : I have a plan. Gadaffi will be taken care of

Thomas : If there is anything we can do please don't hesitate to contact me.

Kwalunga : I know.

(I was nervous. What if my plan doesn't work? I can't die. I just can't)

Thomas : Anthony and Tina are gone home already. Are you....

Kwalunga : Please go Krane. I'm going to be fine

Thomas : Ok

Kwalunga : Krane?

Thomas : Lunga?

Kwalunga : Please tell my wife that I love her so much.

Thomas : Will do

(After Thomas left I took my things and I parked my car down the road. My house was a bit far from there. I got out of the car with

petrol and I poured it all over the ground and I went back to the car and drove to the bar. My phone rang)

Kwalunga : Nazareth (I answered)

Nazareth : They are waiting for you outside of the bar. Allow me to take care of them.

Kwalunga : No Gumbi. Did they see me going to my house?

Nazareth : No. Kwalunga if your plan doesn't work then trust me I will shoot these bastards

Kwalunga : I will tell you if plan B is required. I'm coming out

(I went to the car and I drove off. Two cars were following me. Gadaffi's and Nazareth's

but Nazareth's car was following us from far)

(I reached the spot where I poured the petrol and I stopped the car. I took out my phone and called Nazareth)

Kwalunga : My plan worked. Abort your mission

(I hung up and someone was coming towards my car. I unlocked the door and he got in. It was Gadaffi with a gun)

Gadaffi : Privod (Drive)

(I smiled and locked all doors except mine)

Kwalunga : Where are we going?

Gadaffi : I said drive. You said I'm a coward right? So I'm here to prove to you that I can kill you all by myself

(He came alone? Nice. I slowly pushed my door with my knee)

Kwalunga : Can we talk about this? Gadaffi I'm sorry.

Gadaffi : Vam zhal'? Vam zhal'? (You sorry? You sorry?)

Kwalunga : What you did with Ademaro wasn't my business and I shouldn't have gotten involved.

Gadaffi : Pozdno (Too late)

Kwalunga : Why don't you allow me to....

(I rolled out of the car and pushed the door with my feet. My car was locked with Gadaffi inside)

Gadaffi : Open this door!!! (He screamed)

(Instead of breaking the window and get out he was busy screaming like a bitch. Idiot)

(I took out my gas light and threw it under the car. Boom! Car on fire)

Kwalunga : *Cenere alla Cenere* (Ashes to Ashes)

Nazareth : Get in the car

(When did he get here? I got inside the car and we drove off. Sky's car was on fire with Gadaffi burning inside it. Better her car than my Ferrari. I'll buy her a new one)

Nazareth : Uyinja Hlela

Kwalunga : I know

Nazareth : How did you pull this off?

Kwalunga : I have my ways Gumbi

Nazareth : You didn't need me here.

Kwalunga : Maybe I did.

Nazareth : You are a King

Kwalunga : And every King needs a retinue.

(We fist bump. My plan worked. Gadaffi is dead)

Chapter 58

3 MONTHS LATER

(My life was back to normal. Gadaffi was dead and I was planning for my wedding with Sky. Everything was just so perfect)

(At True Red)

Anthony : There was fire in the shelter.

Kwalunga : Where?

Anthony : Navona square

Kwalunga : Jesus! What about the kids?

Anthony : They are fine but they are on the streets

Kwalunga : Dammit!!!

Anthony : Jeez! Why are you so worried?

(Is this guy serious right now?)

Kwalunga : Anthony we are talking about kids here. Kids who have nowhere to go except the streets. Doesn't it bother you?

Anthony : No. Someone will take them in soon so why should I be worried about kids that I don't even know.

Kwalunga : Caldo get out of my office.

Anthony : Are you serious?

Kwalunga : Get out!!!

(Tina walked in as soon as Anthony walked out)

Tina : Jeez! What the fuck is wrong with him?

Kwalunga : Anthony is a asshole.

Tina : Why are you angry? Did you guys fight?

Kwalunga : What do you want here?

Tina : You need to calm down. Anyway someone is here to s..... Oh there she is

Was it you?

(Anya Fedorov asked walking in)

Kwalunga : Tina please excuse us.

Tina : Are you sure?

Kwalunga : I'll handle this. Go

(Tina stepped out and I locked my door)

Kwalunga : Anya what are you doing here?

Anya : You killed Ivan

Kwalunga : Yes I did and I told you that I would.

Anya : You burned him to death.

Kwalunga : I know what I did and you don't have to remind me.

Anya : It took us two damn months to bury him

Sponsored

Morgan. We had to wait for DNA results because we couldn't identify him.

Kwalunga : I'm glad you finally buried him.

Anya : You are a cold motherfucker

Kwalunga : I know that Anya. What can I do for you?

Anya : The shelter burned down and because you killed Ivan I can't help those kids. Ivan was the only person who helped me financially.

(I stopped what I was doing)

Kwalunga : Nobody died. Right?

Anya : My brother died Morgan. Everyone else believes it was just an accident but I know that you killed my brother.

Kwalunga : I'm not sorry for killing your brother. I'm just sorry that you are sad

Anya : I don't care that he died... I'm just...
(She paused)

Kwalunga : What are you saying?

Anya : He killed my boyfriend Morgan. He killed Mikhail right in front of me.

Kwalunga : Mikhail Agapov?

Anya : Yes. How do you know his name?

Kwalunga : It doesn't matter.

Anya : He was jealous.

Kwalunga : Jealous of his sister?

Anya : Gadaffi and I dated. He is my brother but we fell in love. It all started when he was 14 years old and I was 12. When nobody was home he would sneak into my room and we would kiss and have sex like normal couples.

(This is the craziest thing I have ever heard. Brother and sister dating?)

Kwalunga : Why would you do that with your brother?

Anya : I loved him so much and he loved me. It was more than just Sister- Brother love but when I turned 18 that is when I realized that what I was doing was wrong. I told him to stop coming to my room but he didn't

listen. I started dating Mikhail and one day he followed me to his place. I just heard gunshots and the next thing Mikhail was laying in a pool of blood next to me. Dead.

(Silence)

Anya : He fucked me next to Mikhail's body and he kept saying " You are mine my Anya and mine alone"

Kwalunga : And you are here telling me that I'm a cold motherfucker.

Anya : The police came in and took him away. I cried. Morgan I loved him but not as much as I loved Mikhail. Mikhail was my life.

(Why do I always come across people who have complicated past experiences? Why?)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry Anya

Anya : We need to save those kids Morgan. They are the only thing that is keeping me here. They are the only ones that are keeping me sane.

Kwalunga : Where do we start Anya?

Anya : I found the boy.

Kwalunga : You did?

Anya : Yes. He is out there and I hope you will find him

Kwalunga : Where are they?

Anya : Everywhere. They had nowhere else to go.

Kwalunga : Let's go and find him.

(I grabbed my car keys and ran out. Anthony was standing outside my office)

Kwalunga : Anthony please tell Thomas I'll be back soon.

Anthony : Lunga can we talk about what happened earlier?

Kwalunga : Not now Caldo

Anthony : I'm sorry Lunga.

Kwalunga : I forgive you. Can I go now?

(He laughed)

Anthony : Yeah sure

(Anya and I went to Navona Square and the shelter was burned down for real. My heart was broken. The kids were eating soup and bread outside. We got out of the car and walked towards them)

Anya : This is what they do. They come and eat during the day and later they go

Kwalunga : This is bad Anya.

Anya : I know. Some get lucky and find people who take them in. There is the boy

Kwalunga : Where?

Anya : Under the tree alone with a red t-shirt

Kwalunga : I see him. Can you wait here?

Anya : Of course

(I went to him and he was staring into space holding a slice of brown bread in his dirty hand)

(He is a beautiful young boy. I cleared my throat)

Kwalunga : Hello

(He smiled and blinked a lot)

Boy : Ciao

Kwalunga : Posso unirmi a te? (Mind if I join you)

(He shook his head. I sat down next to him and he gave me his bread. I almost cried)

Boy : E rimasta solo una fetta di pane (There is only one slice of bread left)

Kwalunga : Vai avanti e mangia (Go ahead and eat)

Boy : Per favore mangia con me (Please eat with me)

(He gave me half of the slice and he was left with half)

Kwalunga : Grazie (Thanks)

(We began to eat and we finished in a minute.)

Kwalunga : Vuoi qualcosa da bere? (Would you like something to drink?)

Boy : Per favore (Please)

Kwalunga : Il mio nome e Lunga (My name is Lunga)

(He smiled and looked up at me. He naturally blinks a lot)

Boy : Regalo

(Regalo. Gift. His name is Gift in English)

Kwalunga : Regalo. Non ti metterai nei guai se vieni con me? (Won't you get in trouble if you come with me?)

Regalo : A nessuno importa (Nobody cares)

(I swallowed the lump in my throat)

Kwalunga : I do (I muttered)

(We went to my car and Anya was waiting for me)

Regalo : Anya

(He was happy to see Anya)

Anya : Regalo. Hai un amico adesso? (You have a friend now?)

Regalo : Sara mio padre (He is going to be my father)

(Anya looked at me and my heart started racing)

Chapter 59

Anya : Oh!

Kwalunga : Let's go and get something to eat

Anya : Yeah sure. You guys can go and I will stay behind. I need to speak to someone

Kwalunga : Ok

Anya : Are you ok Lunga?

Kwalunga : Yeah

(We got inside the car and I drove off)

Kwalunga : Quanti anni hai? (How old are you?)

Regalo : 12

Kwalunga : Oh and you love painting?

Regalo : Painting?

Kwalunga : la pittura

Regalo : Yes yes. Molto (A lot)

(I went to buy him a burger and Juice. He ate inside my car)

(I took out my phone and showed him a photo of his painted picture from the house of arte)

Kwalunga : Te lo ricordi (Do you remember?)

(He stopped eating and swallowed hard. I saw tears in his eyes. Maybe showing him was a wrong idea)

Kwalunga : Mi dispiace tanto (I'm very sorry)

(He shook his head and took my phone from me)

Regalo : Questi siamo e eli lio mio cane (This is me and my dog)

Kwalunga : Yeah

Regalo : Fuoco(Fire)Mio Padre's cabina (My father's cabin)

(He was pointing at everything in the picture)

Kwalunga : E lacrime? (And tears?) Perche?
(Why?)

Regalo : Mio padre mori (My father died)

Kwalunga : Nel fuoco? (In the fire?)

Regalo : Yes. Nel fuoco.

(His tears dropped on my phone screen)

Kwalunga : Dove e tua Madre? (Where is your
mom?)

Regalo : Aveva il cancro ed e morta (She had
cancer and she died)

(I remembered Zinzi and I tried to fight
back my tears. I remembered my mother and
I couldn't hold them back. I burst)

Regalo : Mi dispiace tanto babbo (I'm really sorry dad)

(I tried to smile and I couldn't. I pulled him to my chest and kissed the top of his head)

Regalo : Non voglio vederti piangere (I don't want to see you cry)

Kwalunga : It's ok my boy.

Regalo : Per favore non lasciarmi solo (Please don't leave me alone)

(How am I going to do this. Sky is definitely going to kill me this time)

Kwalunga : I'll see what I can do.

(I drove back to the shelter and it was empty. Anya and the other kids were gone. I

tightened my hand on my steering wheel.
Where to from here? Regalo was staring at
me like he could read my mind)

Kwalunga : Shit!

Regalo : Cosa sta succedendo? (What's going
on?)

Kwalunga : Nothing.

(2 hours later I was at Anthony's house with
Regalo.)

Anthony : Lunga No. You are not going to do
this again. Take this boy back

Kwalunga : Please keep your voice down. Caldo
I can't take him back. I just can't

Anthony : Why are you doing this?

Kwalunga : The moment I saw that picture at House of Arte I felt some connection between me and the picture. I wanted to meet with the person behind it and when Anya told me that it's a young boy who painted it I just couldn't wait to see him.

Anthony : Lunga you and Sky need to have children of your own so that you stop taking other people's kids.

Kwalunga : Sky and I will never have kids of our own and maybe Leggero and Regalo are my blessings from above.

Anthony : What do you mean?

Kwalunga : Sky is infertile

(He was shocked)

Anthony : Are you serious?

Kwalunga : Yes. Please take care of Regalo for a few days and I will come and take him home.

Anthony : Anything for you Lunga.

Kwalunga : Thank you Caldo

Anthony : So you want to make him yours like Leggero?

Kwalunga : Yeah.

Anthony : Regalo is old so the process will be very much easier plus he is from the shelter. It will take only a day or two

Kwalunga : Anya called me and told me about everything that I need to do. She said she will speak to people from the shelter to not bother themselves about Regalo anymore.

Anthony : Lunga
Sponsored

you and Sky need to have children of your own so that you stop taking other people's kids.

Kwalunga : Sky and I will never have kids of our own and maybe Leggero and Regalo are my blessings from above.

Anthony : What do you mean?

Kwalunga : Sky is infertile

(He was shocked)

Anthony : Are you serious?

Kwalunga : Yes. Please take care of Regalo for a few days and I will come and take him home.

Anthony : Anything for you Lunga.

Kwalunga : Thank you Caldo

Anthony : So you want to make him yours like Leggero?

Kwalunga : Yeah.

Anthony : Regalo is old so the process will be very much easier plus he is from the shelter. It will take only a day or two

Kwalunga : Anya called me and told me about everything that I need to do. She said she will speak to people from the shelter to not bother themselves about Regalo anymore.

Anthony : Lunga God bless you my man. Italy needs more people like you.

Kwalunga : We need to rebuild that shelter Anthony. Those kids need a place to stay.

Anthony : I spoke to Thomas about it and we are willing to help.

Kwalunga : That's good. You know this time I don't know how I'm going to break the news to Sky.

Anthony : Sky is a good person and I'm sure she won't mind.

Kwalunga : Anthony this is big.

Anthony : Go home and tell her. The sooner the better.

Kwalunga : Wish me luck. Please tell Regalo that I'll be back tomorrow.

Anthony : Sure. Good luck man

(I took my keys and walked out. I am nervous but not as much as I was with Ung'thembile.)

Chapter 60

(When I got home Sky was busy looking at wedding dresses on some magazine)

Sky : Baby look at this one.

Kwalunga : It's beautiful Sweetheart. Just like you.

Sky : I love you.

(I wonder if you'll still love me after this)

Kwalunga : But I told you to get a wedding planner.

Sky : I did but he will only be able to make it here by next week.

Kwalunga : He?

(Sky laughed)

Sky : Don't worry baby He is not into women.

Kwalunga : Doesn't he have a dick?

Sky : Uhmhhh! He does.

Kwalunga : Get another wedding planner. A female wedding planner

(Sky laughed)

Sky : Don't be jealous baby. Look at his work. It's out of this world

(She showed me pictures on her laptop and I must say that the guy is good at what he does)

Kwalunga : Ok fine. We need him

(Sky kissed me)

Sky : You do know how much I love you.
Right?

Kwalunga : Yes sweetheart and I love you
too.

(She looked at me and frowned)

Sky : Lunga are you ok?

Kwalunga : Aha! Why?

Sky : I love this new husky voice of yours. It
makes me horny

(She sucked my neck and I stood up)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart not today.

Sky : Since when do we have days to fuck and
not to fuck.

Kwalunga : I'm just tired Sky

Sky : Are you ok Morgan?

Kwalunga : Yes Sweetheart I'm fine.

Sky : Are you seeing someone else?

Kwalunga : Don't start with me Sky. I'm begging you

Sky : I just don't understand why....

Kwalunga : I'm not in the mood to have sex and I don't understand why is that such a big deal.

Sky : Ok. I'm going to bed.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart listen

(She ran upstairs)

Kwalunga : Dammit!!

(I didn't know how to tell her. I followed her upstairs and she was already in bed with Unga. I guess he is sleeping with us tonight. I stood next to bed)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart can we talk?

(Silence)

Kwalunga : My love I have something to tell you. I found that boy from the shelter

Sky : I'm happy for you.

Kwalunga : Is that all you can say?

Sky : What do you want me to say Morgan?
You told me how you wanted to meet up with
that boy so I'm happy for you that you
finally met him.

Kwalunga : Their shelter burned down.

Sky : I heard about that. Don't worry
somebody will take them in

Kwalunga : And what if nobody takes them
in?

Sky : What? You want to bring them here
now?

Kwalunga : No. Only Regalo

(Sky laughed)

Sky : Very funny.

(Silence. She really thinks that I'm joking)

Sky : Wait. Are you serious?

(She got out of bed quickly)

Kwalunga : Yeah. I left him with Anthony because I wanted to speak to you about it first.

Sky : Morgan what is wrong with you? We have a child so I don't understand why you want to bring a stranger into our house .

Kwalunga : He is not a stranger. He is just a boy who needs a home and parents.

Sky : Morgan can we talk?

(Silence)

Kwalunga : My love I have something to tell you. I found that boy from the shelter

Sky : I'm happy for you.

Kwalunga : Is that all you can say?

Sky : What do you want me to say Morgan? You told me how you wanted to meet up with that boy so I'm happy for you that you finally met him.

Kwalunga : Their shelter burned down.

Sky : I heard about that. Don't worry somebody will take them in

Kwalunga : And what if nobody takes them in?

Sky : What? You want to bring them here now?

Kwalunga : No. Only Regalo

(Sky laughed)

Sky : Very funny.

(Silence. She really thinks that I'm joking)

Sky : Wait. Are you serious?

(She got out of bed quickly)

Kwalunga : Yeah. I left him with Anthony because I wanted to speak to you about it first.

Sky : Morgan what is wrong with you? We have a child so I don't understand why you want to bring a stranger into our house .

Kwalunga : He is not a stranger. He is just a boy who needs a home and parents.

Sky : Morgan stop acting like a superhero. You can't save this world and you can't save all these homeless kids.

Kwalunga : I just want to save Regalo.

Sky : No!!!! I'm not going to raise a stranger here.

Kwalunga : Ok

Sky : Guest room is ready for you.

Kwalunga : I see.

(I went to the guest room and took off my clothes and got to bed. I felt like my world was shutting down)

(It was after midnight when the door opened. I knew it was Sky. She got inside my duvet and wrapped her leg around me. She was naked)

Sky : Baby I'm sorry

(Silence)

Sky : I will never be able to give you children my love but here you are instead of getting every other girl pregnant you are saving children who have no one else in this world. I just want you to know that whatever you do I have your back my love.

Kwalunga : Do you mean that?

Sky : Yes baby.

Kwalunga : Thank you Sweetheart and I promise you that I'm not going to bring the whole squad. We are going to rebuild the shelter for those kids and we are going to make sure that they have proper food and clothes.

Sky : You are a good man Lunga.

Kwalunga : I know what it feels like to have nothing and no one.

Sky : Bring our Regalo home.

Kwalunga : I love you so much. You know that?

Sky : Yes baby and you are my life. How about we wait for another year for our wedding? I mean we are still dealing with lots of things at the moment

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

Sky : Yes baby. I want you to be part of planning our wedding and currently you are very busy.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I can drop everything to give you What you want.

Sky : I know baby and I know how much those kids mean to you. Please save them first. I'm not going anywhere

Kwalunga : Did I tell you how much I love you?

(She giggled)

Sky : No you didn't.

(I kissed her all over her face)

Kwalunga : Do you still want my dick? Uh?
Uh?

(She laughed)

Sky : I've been dying to have you inside me.

Kwalunga : Do you feel that?

(She laughed)

Sky : What?

Kwalunga : My dick is screaming for you.

(The feeling of her warm hands around my dick caused my dick to grow harder. I groaned)

(The following day we woke up and Unga was not feeling well and Sky took him to a doctor. I went to work)

Kwalunga : Anthony how is Regalo?

Anthony : That boy eats a lot just like you.

Kwalunga : He is tall like me bro so yeah.

Anthony : Nicola took him out today and she said she will buy him some clothes.

Kwalunga : I owe you guys. He is coming home today.

Anthony : He is home already.He was asking about you non stop and I told Nicola to take him to your house after shopping.

Kwalunga : Thank you man.

Anthony : Check your emails. I made few calls to some schools and I sent you a list of the ones who accepted him

Kwalunga : Can I do that later? I need to see Anya and discuss some things about Regalo

Anthony : Oh yes that. Social workers called and they said I must give you their address.

(He handed me a small piece of paper)

Anthony : Their offices are there.

Kwalunga : Are you not coming with me?

Anthony : No Lunga. I'm running an investigation about the fire. Thomas thinks someone was behind it

Kwalunga : I think so too.

Anthony : You guys are right. Ekaterina did it

Kwalunga : What?

Anthony : I'm not sure why but someone saw her at the shelter before and after the fire.

Kwalunga : You know what I think? I think she did th....

Knock! Is it safe to come in?

(That was Anya)

Kwalunga : Yeah sure. You good?

Anya : Yes. Hi Anthony

Anthony : Hi Anya. Lunga see you later

Kwalunga : Sure

(Anthony walked out)

Kwalunga : Why are you here?

Anya : Because I miss you.

Kwalunga : You do?

Anya : Aha!

Kwalunga : Then maybe you should come with me to see the social workers.

Anya : They didn't call you and tell you about the protest?

Kwalunga : Protest?

Anya : Yep the social workers are on strike.

Kwalunga : Why?

Anya : They want the government to employ more social workers . I didn't know that Italy only has 42 000 social workers

Kwalunga : Oh yeah? And Russia?

Anya : The last time I checked we had 150 000 qualified social workers

Kwalunga : Wow that's good. South Africa has about 35 000 registered social workers as well as auxiliary social workers.

Anya : If they don't stop they are going to lose their jobs.

Kwalunga : And trust me they don't want that. Finding a job in Italy is very difficult. When I got here the unemployment rate was at 12% and reached 40% among young people. So what I'm going to do about Regalo?

Anya : Check your emails. They sent you all relevant information and all the documents that you need to fill.

Kwalunga : Oooohk

(I checked my emails and everything was there)

Anya : When are you taking me to South Africa?

(She was busy massaging my neck and I was busy reading these documents to tell her to stop)

Kwalunga : Anya these are application forms.

(She was now kissing my neck and my chiskop)

Anya : I know babe

(I stood up)

Kwalunga : I'm not your babe. Anya these people are not going to grant my application. I have a criminal record

(She locked my door)

Anya : Kalunga I got you. Ok? Regalo is yours and I will make sure of that my love. Now let's have some fun

(Her dress was on the floor. I swallowed hard. She pushed me back to my chair. She fed me her nipple and my dick got hard. The next thing my pants were on my ankles and Anya was sucking my dick)

Kwalunga : I don't have a condom here

Anya : I do. (She whispered)

(This bitch knew exactly why she was coming here. While we were busy fucking my office phone rang)

Kwalunga : Kwalunga Hlela

Are you running or something?

(Fuck! What if this is important? I pulled out and snatched the condom out of my dick. Anya was so irritated. She tried to help herself with my dick but I pushed her away)

Kwalunga : No. Who is this?

Jeez Lunga ndimi u Lonwabo.

(What the fuck does she want?. I fixed myself and gave Anya her dress. Sex is the last thing I need now)

Kwalunga : What do you want?

Lonwabo : Ndi apha e Rome

Kwalunga : What the fuck do you want in Rome because I told you not come here?

Lonwabo : Lunga I miss you so much

Kwalunga : No don't give me that. Lonwabo you need to go back to South Africa

Lonwabo : The sooner you see me the sooner I go back.

Kwalunga : Fine. Send me your address. (I hung up)

(Anya was busy going through some and she didn't look happy at all)

Anya : You need to drop this investigation Morgan

Kwalunga : What are you talking about?

Anya : This

(It was Anthony's file. He forgot it here earlier.)

Kwalunga : Your sister burned the shelter

Anya : I know. She told me

Kwalunga : What?

Anya : Morgan she blamed me for Ivan's death. She hates that I'm still seeing you and she wanted to hurt me by burning down the shelter.

Kwalunga : Are you also crazy like her?

Anya : No. Kwalunga what if she burns down The house of Arte

Kwalunga : It's ok. I'll kill her

Anya : Morgan!!!!

Kwalunga : What do you want me to say?

Anya : Morgan you need to stop killing people.

Kwalunga : You have no idea how much I try to stop.

Anya : I'll handle Ekaterina

Kwalunga : Those kids are homeless because of her. Handle her or I will. I need to go

Anya : What about round two?

Kwalunga : This is not your dick Anya

(I walked out. I have Lonwabo to deal with)

Chapter 61

(I went to Lonwabo's Hotel room)

Kwalunga : Lonwabo I told that I have a wife

Lonwabo : Lunga I love you

Kwalunga : I don't. I have no feelings for you
Nwabo

Lonwabo : You don't mean that.

Kwalunga : I do Sweetheart. I can't give you
what you want from me. I love Sky so much
Lonwabo and I don't want to hurt her.

Lonwabo : No no. You don't baby. You don't

Kwalunga : I do Nwabo. U Sky uwu mama wezingane zami. I'm fucking around and she is busy at home taking care of my boys. I shouldn't be here

Lonwabo : Spend the night with me. Please

Kwalunga : I can't.

(She started kissing me and I pushed her back)

Kwalunga : Just stop.

Lonwabo : Dammit! I love you Lunga!!!! (She screamed)

Kwalunga : You need to stop

Lonwabo : Have sex with me one more time and I'll stop. I promise

(I didn't want to do this but she is pushing it now)

Kwalunga : Lonwabo you are leaving me with no choice but to call your husband.

(She quickly wiped her tears)

Lonwabo : Please don't call him. My father will kill me. I won't bother you again. I promise to go back to South Africa tomorrow

(She is just so soft. I pulled her by her waist and I kissed her. I looked down straight into her eyes)

Kwalunga : I can never be with you Sweetheart and I'm sorry

(I kissed her one more time and I left)

(9 MONTHS LATER)

(Leggero was now one year old. Regalo was legally mine and he knew exactly how to get to my nerves. Being a father is not easy)

Kwalunga : Regalo! Regalo! (I shouted)

Sky : What did he do this time?

(Sky asked. walking downstairs)

Kwalunga : Where the fuck is this boy Sky?
Regaloooo!!! Come down here (I was fuming)

Regalo : Dad

(He was slowly walking down the stairs)

Kwalunga : Don't Dad me. Regalo please explain why I'm getting calls from your school?

Regalo : Dad I can explain.

Kwalunga : Yes my boy. That's what I'm asking you to do.

(I sat down on the couch)

Regalo : Mah please. He is angry

Sky : No Regalo. Why is he angry?

Regalo : Dad you are not going to use your belt right?

Kwalunga : I said explain to me (I yelled)

(He is trying to soft me up with all these questions)

Regalo : Ok I didn't go to school Dad. I'm sorry

Kwalunga : From when?

Regalo : From yesterday

Kwalunga : Regalo didn't I drop you at school yesterday and today?

Regalo : You did

Kwalunga : Then what happened?

Regalo : As soon as you left me. I went to my friends house

Kwalunga : Why?

Regalo : Because those teachers are irritating me Dad. I'm a man now please let me decide what's best for me.

(I remember saying exactly this to my father when I was 16 years old. Regalo is an Italian but we have so much in common. He looks older than his age just like i do. He is 13 years old but he looks 16th or more)

Kwalunga : Regalo you are only 13 years old. Sky go upstairs please

Regalo : Mah please don't go.

Sky : Baby please don't beat him

Kwalunga : Sky!!!

Regalo : I'm sorry baba

(There was silence. Where did he learn that?
We taught him English but not Isizulu. There
was no way I was going to beat him after
that "Baba")

Kwalunga : Sky please speak to your son or
I'll kill him

Sky : I will Baby. Regalo go and wash your
father's car. Now!

(Regalo ran outside)

Kwalunga : This boy will be the death of me
Sweetheart

Sky : He is your son

Kwalunga : I know sweetheart

Sky : You are doing great baby. Don't worry

Kwalunga : Am I doing great? Because I don't know anymore. Regalo doesn't listen to me
Sky

Sky : I will speak to him

Sponsored

my love. Are you going back to work?

Kwalunga : No. I told Thomas I'm not coming back

Sky : Let's go out then.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I'm tired

Sky : Please baby

Kwalunga : Ok fine But we are coming back in an hour

Sky : Regalo!! Come and get ready

Kwalunga : I'll go and call him

(I went to my garage and he was busy washing my car. He stopped as soon as he saw me)

Regalo : Dad I said I'm sorry

Kwalunga : That's not why I'm here. Your mother is calling you. We are going out

(He smiled. My boy still blinks a lot)

Kwalunga : Regalo you do know that I love you. Right?

Regalo : Yes baba

Kwalunga : Whatever I do. I do it because I love you and I want you to have a better life Son. I want you to finish school because school is very important.

Regalo : Baba what if I don't want to go to school?

Kwalunga : I will make sure that you want to go school.

Regalo : But dad...

Kwalunga : But nothing Regalo. Now go to your mother

(He was angry and he wanted to cry)

Kwalunga : Regalo are you angry with me?

(He shook his head)

Regalo : No dad

Kwalunga : Fist bump?

(He laughs and we fist bump)

Regalo : Baba please buy me a smartphone
and a new laptop

Kwalunga : Promise me that you will go to
school first.

Regalo : I promise.

Kwalunga : Good. I'll sort you out Son.

Regalo : Thank you Dad

Kwalunga : If you don't go now then your mother will kill you

(He laughed)

Regalo : I love you baba

(It was the first time I heard that from him and I was shocked)

Kwalunga : I love you too son. Don't ever forget that.

Chapter 62

(We drove to Supplizio restaurant and Sky looked like an angel)

Kwalunga : This was a great idea. Thank you
Sweetheart

Sky : We should go out more often

Kwalunga : I agree

(Regalo was staring at every single woman walking in and Leggero was fast asleep in his stroller. My boy is lazy like that)

Kwalunga : Regalo?

Regalo : What have I done baba?

(He laughed)

Kwalunga : If you focused on your school work like you do with women then trust me you wouldn't hate school.

Sky : Those women are older than you

Regalo : Old and hot

Kwalunga : Regalo say that one more time and I will remind you of who I am.

Regalo : Jeez Dad I'm just kidding. You are getting old for real

(We laughed)

Sky : He is getting old but he is hot

Kwalunga : Tell him Sweetheart

(We laughed. There was suddenly a pain in my chest. I flinched)

Sky : Baby are you ok?

Kwalunga : Yes sweetheart

Regalo : Dad you are sweating

Kwalunga : I think it's something I ate.

Please excuse me

(I went to the bathroom and I was shocked when I saw blood coming out of my nose. I washed my face and walked back to the table. Boom Lonwabo was sitting with my family)

Kwalunga : Oh Hi

Sky : Baby this is Nwabho. She thinks I look like someone she knows

(Sky laughed)

Kwalunga : I see

Lonwabo : You must be her husband

Kwalunga : The one and only

Lonwabo : Lonwabo Mzamane

(Bitch I know exactly who you are)

Kwalunga : Kwalunga Hlela

(We shook hands and she held my hand more than necessary. She cleared her throat)

Lonwabo : You have a beautiful family Mr Hlela

Kwalunga : I know

Sky : Thank you Nwabho

Kwalunga : Now that you know my wife is not the person you thought she was Can you excuse us? We are trying to enjoy some time as family

Lonwabo : Of course. I'm sorry

Sky : Lunga is just being silly. You are welcome to eat with us Nwabho

Lonwabo : You are so sweet Mrs Hlela

Kwalunga : Fuck (I muttered)

Sky : Baby are you sure you're ok?

Kwalunga : Yes Sweetheart

Sky : Good. Tell us more about yourself
Nwabho

Lonwabo : I was born in South Africa

Sky : Really? Baby she is from South Africa

Kwalunga : I know

Regalo : You do?

(I didn't mean to say that)

Kwalunga : Son come on. Her name is Lonwabo so of course she is from South Africa

Regalo : I see

(I feel like this boy can read my mind)

Sky : So why are you here?

Lonwabo : I'm here for the lover of my life

(She smiled and looked at me. I almost choked on my drink)

Sky : That's nice

Lonwabo : Yes but things are complicated

Sky : Do tell

Lonwabo : He is....He loves me but He is married to someone else. He is not happy I know it.

(I'm going to kill this bitch right here and right now)

Sky : That's.... wow I don't know. When did he get married?

(Lonwabo cleared her throat)

Lonwabo : After we met.

Sky : Men are idiots. How can he do that to you?

Lonwabo : They are idiots but I'm not going to give up just like that.

Sky : Girl fight for your man.

(Lonwabo smiled)

Lonwabo : Trust me. I will.

Sky : Baby what do you think?

Kwalunga : Nothing Sky. Can we go now?

Regalo : Yeah I think we should go

Sky : I wish you all the best girl. Take my number so that we can talk.

Kwalunga : Are you giving your number to strangers now?

Sky : Come on baby. She is not a stranger

Kwalunga : Regalo let's go

(I pushed Unga's stroller and we walked out leaving Sky behind)

Regalo : Dad what was that about?

Kwalunga : Are you interrogating me now?

Regalo : No

Kwalunga : Good

(We arrived at Sky's car. I had to buy her a new one since I burned the old one. I placed Unga on his seat)

Kwalunga : Regalo get in the car

Regalo : What about mom?

Kwalunga : She is coming

(We waited inside the car and Sky arrived)

Sky : That was rude Morgan

Kwalunga : I don't care and I don't have time to entertain strangers.

(I drove off. Lonwabo is here to ruin my life and I can't allow that)

(I woke up the next morning and got ready for work. Regalo was getting ready for school)

Sky : Nwabho is coming to have dinner with us. Please be home early

Kwalunga : I have a lot of work to do today

Sky : Morgan please

Kwalunga : Can't you guys have that stupid dinner without me?

Sky : Stupid dinner?

Kwalunga : It is stupid. You are inviting strangers to our home and that is stupid Sky

Sky : Why do you hate her so much?

Kwalunga : I don't trust her. That's all

Sky : She is a good person Morgan and she loves our kids

Kwalunga : Hooray. Give her a medal

Sky : Don't be ridiculous

Kwalunga : That's what she deserves right?
For loving our boys and for being a good person

Sky : Please be home early and be nice to her

Kwalunga : Regalo let's go!

Sky : Morgan do you understand what I'm saying?

Kwalunga : Sky I don't care

Sky : Is that blood?

Kwalunga : Where?

Sky : Your nose. You have a nosebleed

Kwalunga : Dammit

(I went to the bathroom and Sky followed me. What's wrong with me?)

Sky : Baby what's wrong?

Kwalunga : Nothing for you to worry about.

(I washed my face and I felt a stabbing pain in my chest. I groaned)

Sky : You are not going to work today because you are sick

Kwalunga : I'm fine

Sky : No you are not.

Kwalunga : Stop fussing

Sponsored

I know it.

(I'm going to kill this bitch right here and right now)

Sky : That's.... wow I don't know. When did he get married?

(Lonwabo cleared her throat)

Lonwabo : After we met.

Sky : Men are idiots. How can he do that to you?

Lonwabo : They are idiots but I'm not going to give up just like that.

Sky : Girl fight for your man.

(Lonwabo smiled)

Lonwabo : Trust me. I will.

Sky : Baby what do you think?

Kwalunga : Nothing Sky. Can we go now?

Regalo : Yeah I think we should go

Sky : I wish you all the best girl. Take my number so that we can talk.

Kwalunga : Are you giving your number to strangers now?

Sky : Come on baby. She is not a stranger

Kwalunga : Regalo let's go

(I pushed Unga's stroller and we walked out leaving Sky behind)

Regalo : Dad what was that about?

Kwalunga : Are you interrogating me now?

Regalo : No

Kwalunga : Good

(We arrived at Sky's car. I had to buy her a new one since I burned the old one. I placed Unga on his seat)

Kwalunga : Regalo get in the car

Regalo : What about mom?

Kwalunga : She is coming

(We waited inside the car and Sky arrived)

Sky : That was rude Morgan

Kwalunga : I don't care and I don't have time to entertain strangers.

(I drove off. Lonwabo is here to ruin my life and I can't allow that)

(I woke up the next morning and got ready for work. Regalo was getting ready for school)

Sky : Nwabho is coming to have dinner with us. Please be home early

Kwalunga : I have a lot of work to do today

Sky : Morgan please

Kwalunga : Can't you guys have that stupid dinner without me?

Sky : Stupid dinner?

Kwalunga : It is stupid. You are inviting strangers to our home and that is stupid Sky

Sky : Why do you hate her so much?

Kwalunga : I don't trust her. That's all

Sky : She is a good person Morgan and she loves our kids

Kwalunga : Hooray. Give her a medal

Sky : Don't be ridiculous

Kwalunga : That's what she deserves right?
For loving our boys and for being a good person

Sky : Please be home early and be nice to her

Kwalunga : Regalo let's go!

Sky : Morgan do you understand what I'm saying?

Kwalunga : Sky I don't care

Sky : Is that blood?

Kwalunga : Where?

Sky : Your nose. You have a nosebleed

Kwalunga : Dammit

(I went to the bathroom and Sky followed me. What's wrong with me?)

Sky : Baby what's wrong?

Kwalunga : Nothing for you to worry about.

(I washed my face and I felt a stabbing pain in my chest. I groaned)

Sky : You are not going to work today because you are sick

Kwalunga : I'm fine

Sky : No you are not.

Kwalunga : Stop fussing Sky. I said I'm fine!

Sky : Morgan what is wrong with you?

Kwalunga : Nothing woman! Jesus! Just stop (I yelled)

(She walked out)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I'm sorry

(I followed her)

Sky : Morgan do you still love me?

Kwalunga : Of course Sky. What kind of question is that?

Sky : Are you sick?

Kwalunga : I'm not sick Sweetheart

Sky : And that blood?

Kwalunga : It meant nothing. Don't worry

Sky : I am worried Morgan

(That stabbing pain again. I took a deep breath)

Kwalunga : It was just a nosebleed. I'm going to work now bye

Sky : I love you Morgan

Kwalunga : Me too

Sky : You too? Really Morgan?

(I chuckled and walked out. Regalo was having breakfast downstairs)

Kwalunga : Why are you wearing that?

Regalo : What?

Kwalunga : Shorts and hat..... Those sneakers are dirty

Regalo : Dad it's Friday

Kwalunga : So?

Regalo : Sports Dad Sports

Kwalunga : Oh that. Change those bloody sneakers

(He sighed)

Regalo : Dad it's Golden Goose. They are dirty looking

Kwalunga : I don't care what it is. They are inappropriate for school

Regalo : Dad please

Kwalunga : Go and change those sneakers now Regalo. We are leaving in the next 5 minutes

Regalo : I have the worst Dad in the whole world

Sky : What's going on here?

Kwalunga : Sky why would you allow Regalo to wear those dirty sneakers for school? Who bought them anyway?

Sky : You bought them Morgan. Baby please go and change them

Regalo : But Mah

Sky : Now Regalo.

Kwalunga : I'm late for work. Hurry up
Regalo

Sky : You can go. I will take Regalo to school

Kwalunga : Are you sure?

Sky : Yes. I have to buy a few things for Leggero anyway

Kwalunga : Thanks.

Sky : Can I buy you anything?

Kwalunga : No. Bye sweetheart

(I kissed her forehead and I left)

Chapter 63

(AT TRUE RED)

Tina : Lunga your eyes. Are you ok?

Kwalunga : I'm ok. What's wrong with my eyes?

Tina : They are.....

Thomas : Red. Did you get some sleep?

Kwalunga : I did. I just have a terrible headache

Thomas : Please go home.

Kwalunga : No

Thomas : Tina please check if Dr Ferrari is available. This guy is sick

Kwalunga : I'm fine guys. Please just... stop

Tina : No Lunga. I'll tell Ferrari to come here

(Tina went to her office)

Kwalunga : Ok fine. Where is Caldo?

Thomas : He is running late

Kwalunga : Cool. I need your signature on this

Thomas : You want to open up a shelter?

Kwalunga : Yeah. Not just for kids but for everyone who is homeless

Thomas : Wow that is amazing

Kwalunga : I'm going to start back home though

Thomas : South Africa?

Kwalunga : Yeah

Thomas : Do you need any help?

Kwalunga : I will let you know when I do.

(Dr Ferrari walked in. That was quick)

Dr Ferrari : Gentlemen

Thomas : Ferrari. There is your patient

Kwalunga : I told them I'm not sick

Dr Ferrari : You look sick

Thomas : I'll leave you to it Doc

(Thomas stepped out)

Kwalunga : How did you get here so fast?

Dr Ferrari : I wasn't far from here.

(He started doing his stupid tests)

Dr Ferrari : Everything seems normal

Kwalunga : I told you that I'm not sick

Dr Ferrari : But your eyes

Kwalunga : Doc I'm fine. Can I get back to work now?

Dr Ferrari : Please eat and take these pills

Kwalunga : Will do. Thanks Doc

(It was after lunch when I received a call from Sky)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart

Sky : You need to come home. Your son is crying and he is going crazy

Kwalunga : Leggero?

Sky : The first born. He was involved in a school fight.

Kwalunga : What?

Sky : Some boy punched him.

Kwalunga : So it wasn't a fight. They punched Regalo and that was it?

Sky : That's why he is acting all crazy right now.

Kwalunga : I'm on my way.

(Thomas walked in)

Thomas : Is Dr Ferrari gone?

Kwalunga : Yes and I'm fine. Thomas I need to go

Thomas : Is there a problem?

Kwalunga : Yes with my first born

Thomas : What's wrong with him.

Kwalunga : I don't know. That's what I need to find out.

Thomas : Ok. Please go and call me if there is a problem

Kwalunga : Will do. Bye

(I drove to my house as fast as I could)

Kwalunga : What happened?

Regalo : Those kids hate me Dad. That's what happened

Kwalunga : Who punched you?

Sky : I know that boy and I'm going to fuck him up for beating my son. I will show him who I am

Kwalunga : Sweetheart may you please excuse us?

Sky : Fine. I want to call that stupid principal anyway. I'll be upstairs

(Sky was gone and it was Regalo and I now)

Kwalunga : Tell me exactly what happened

Regalo : I don't know who switched our school bags and the next thing I know Agata

was punching me and accusing me of stealing his bag Dad

Kwalunga : Did you fight back?

Regalo : No

Kwalunga : Why not?

Regalo : I was scared baba

Kwalunga : Scared? You were scared?

Regalo : Yes (He said in a whisper)

Kwalunga : Who is your father?

Regalo : Kwalunga Hlela

Kwalunga : Have you ever seen me scared?

Regalo : No

Kwalunga : Regalo listen to me and listen to me very carefully. Your mother is not going to be here forever and I will not be here forever so one day it's going to be just you and Leggero Your younger brother. What I mean is that your mom and I can't fight your battles. You need to fight back Regalo. Do you understand me?

Regalo : Yes Dad

Kwalunga : You can't be weak Regalo and you can't be scared. You can't come back crying because you feel defeated without even trying to fight. You are Kwalunga's Son. You are a Hlela. Your father is a Stoic Son. Your father fights back every time without even thinking twice. I kill if I have to. Whether it's family or not

Sponsored

I don't care. If it means I have to protect myself I do it Regalo.

Regalo : I understand

Kwalunga : Vengeance is very important. Never allow people who hurted you to walk free. Attack back. Do whatever it takes and kill them if you have to. Remember No compassion! No mercy!.Do you understand me!!? (I yelled)

Regalo : Yes. Yes Dad

(I felt that stabbing pain in my chest. I groaned)

Kwalunga : Now go.

Regalo : Dad your nose is bleeding

Kwalunga : Dammit!

Regalo : Baba are you ok?

Kwalunga : Yes. I just need to lay down a bit

(He wanted to cry. I saw it in his eyes)

Kwalunga : Don't you dare cry.

(I went upstairs to our bedroom)

Sky : I can't get hold of principal

Kwalunga : Leave her

Sky : Just like that?

Kwalunga : Yes Sweetheart. Just like that

Sky : Are you ok? Your eyes are red

Kwalunga : I'm fine my love. I just wanna sleep

Sky : Of course. I'll wake you up when it's time for dinner

(I forgot about that stupid dinner)

Kwalunga : Where is Leggero?

Sky : With my mother

Kwalunga : She is here?

Sky : No. She is at my father's house

Kwalunga : Are they back together?

Sky : I think so.

Kwalunga : That's good.

Sky : Yeah. I need to start cooking because Nwabho will be here soon.

Kwalunga : Yeah

Sky : Are you going to be fine?

Kwalunga : Yes Sweetheart

(She kissed me and then she left. I fell asleep)

(I was walking with my father. The place was peaceful and the air was cold but refreshing)

Mzwandile : Kwalunga you need to do the right .

Kwalunga : What is the right thing Madlula?

Mzwandile : Find yourself.

Kwalunga : I know who I am

(He shook his head)

Mzwandile : You think you know but the truth is you don't.

Kwalunga : I don't understand Madlula

Mzwandile : It's not my place to make you understand.

Kwalunga : If it's not your place then who is it Baba?

Mzwandile : Go back home and that's where you will find the answers

Kwalunga : I can't baba

Mzwandile : Are you scared?

Kwalunga : No baba

Mzwandile : Then what is it?

Kwalunga : I have all the answers I need.

Mzwandile : You don't. What you did back home is terrible and I don't recognize you anymore

Kwalunga : I did what I had to do Madlula

Mzwandile : You didn't have to kill them

Kwalunga : They killed my mother

Mzwandile : I know what they did. Go back home

Kwalunga : Please take me to my mother. I miss her so much

Mzwandile : I'm not allowed to do that
Kwalunga

Kwalunga : She is my mother. Surely I am allowed to see her so please Madlula. I want to tell her about Ung'thembile and Regalo

Mzwandile : If you come with me then you will die. Is that what you want?

Kwalunga : No baba

Mzwandile : I have to go now and Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : Madlula?

Mzwandile : Take your family to Kwamaphumulo because we can't protect them. We don't see them as yours. We don't see them as yours....We don't see them as yo

Sky : Morgan wake up!

(I quickly sat up from the bed and looked around)

Kwalunga : Shit! I was dreaming

Sky : About what?

Kwalunga : Nothing. What time is it?

Sky : 08h30pm. Dinner is ready and Nwabho is here

(I wonder what she wants in my house)

Kwalunga : Fine. I need to take a quick shower

Sky : Leggero is back. We are all downstairs waiting for you

Kwalunga : Ok. I'll join you now

(I took a shower and wore my hooded tracksuit. I went downstairs and Lonwabo was there. She bit her lip when she saw me)

Sky : Baby

(Sky kissed me and we sat down. Leggero was on my lap)

Lonwabo : Thank you for inviting me Sky

(Sky smiled)

Lonwabo : Regalo is tall like you Lunga.

Kwalunga : He is my son.

Lonwabo : And Leggero is gorgeous like you.

Sky : Can we eat now?

Lonwabo : Yeah sure

Sky : Thank you!

(That was firm.)

Sky : Regalo please pray for us before we eat

(I just bowed my head and when I looked around Sky was just staring at Lonwabo. Anger was written all over her face. Regalo finished praying and we started eating)

Sky : So how are things going with the lover of your life (She emphasized the lover of your life part)

Lonwabo : Pretty well actually.

Sky : I see. Who is he?

(I clenched my teeth)

Lonwabo : You mean his name?

Sky : Yes

(Lonwabo cleared her throat and Regalo was staring at me)

Lonwabo : Lunga.... Lungani Nzama

(I almost had a heart attack. Sky sighed and closed her eyes)

Regalo : Oh. I thought it was my dad

(He laughed)

Sky : She wouldn't dare

(This is getting interesting. Lonwabo laughed)

Lonwabo : Are you sure?

Sky : What do you mean?

Lonwabo : No. Nothing darling

(Sky placed my gun on the table and smiled.
We were all shocked)

Sky : Relax guys. This is just for protection
because you might never know what the
person next to you is planning

Kwalunga : Sky we have kids here

Sky : Morgan. Please

(Silence)

Sky : You see Ms Mzamane if you want me to
be a good girl I'll be a good girl and if you
want me to be a bad girl I'll be a bad girl but
I have no problem being both. You
understand?

(Lonwabo swallowed roughly)

Lonwabo : Yes

Sky : I am Suffocate's daughter. A fiancée of a King and here we don't hesitate to kill. No bitch will ever come between me and this man next to me. Nobody. I don't care who you are or where you from. If you touch my man I will kill you without thinking twice so don't ask me if I'm sure. Sure of what exactly?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart?

Sky : No Morgan

Lonwabo : I didn't mean to upset you Sky

Sky : Who said I'm upset? Eat your food

Lonwabo : I think I should go

Sky : Yeah maybe you should because it seems like you have forgotten why you here.

Lonwabo : Thanks for dinner

Sky : Bye Nwabho

(She left)

Sky : Regalo take your brother and go upstairs

(Regalo quickly took Leggero from me and they went upstairs. No questions asked)

Sky : Morgan talk

Kwalunga : About what?

Sky : Who the fuck is she?

Kwalunga : I told you that I don't want her here but you didn't listen to me.

Sky : That is not the answer I want to hear

Kwalunga : Just some crazy ex

Sky : I knew it. Is she here for you? Are you this so-called lover of her life?

Kwalunga : No I'm not

Sky : Do you love her?

Kwalunga : What? Hell no!

Sky : Are you happy with me?

Kwalunga : Of course Sweetheart. I love you

Sky : Good. Let's go to bed

(That was... I don't know. Unexpected?)

Chapter 64

(Sky held me for the whole night like I was going to run away or something)

Regalo : Mom! Dad! Can I come in?

(Regalo was shouting at the door)

Sky : Yes baby come in

(He stepped in and searched our bed)

Kwalunga : What is wrong with you?

Regalo : My brother. Where is Leggero?

Kwalunga : What do you mean where is Leggero?

Regalo : He is gone baba!

Sky : Gone where? Leggero is one year old for God's sake

Regalo : I slept with him in my room last night and when I woke up he was not there. I checked everywhere. He is gone mom. Someone took my brother

(I froze)

Kwalunga : What?

Regalo : Where is he Dad?

Kwalunga : Regalo we need to get dressed.
Please wait outside

Regalo : Oh God!

(He rolled his eyes and walked out)

(We searched everywhere but Unga was
nowhere. I was going crazy)

Kwalunga : Someone took him

Sky : But who? How?

Kwalunga : Where are the keys?

Sky : What keys?

Kwalunga : For this house

(We searched for keys and we couldn't find them)

Kwalunga : That bitch took my son

Sky : Lonwabho?

Kwalunga : Yes Lonwabo. Sky this is your fault

Sky : My fault? My fault?

Kwalunga : Yes! Your fault Sky. I told you that I don't want her here.

Sky : Is that so?

Kwalunga : You invited strangers to our house and guess what happened? She stole our keys and she came back to steal our son. Are you happy now?

Sky : Oh please Morgan. She is your girlfriend and she was here for you

Kwalunga : That's all you know? To accuse me of cheating. You don't care about my missing son because he is not yours right?

Sky : Morgan take that back.

Kwalunga : Or what?

Regalo : Dad please. Just stop! both of you . My brother is missing but you guys are busy fighting like a dog and a cat. Enough!!! (He shouted)

(Silence)

Kwalunga : I'll find your brother. Sweetheart I'm sorry

Sky : Go and find my son. Kill that bitch if you have to

Kwalunga : Got it

(I took out my phone and dialed Thomas's number)

Kwalunga : Krane I won't make it to work

Thomas : What's going on?

Kwalunga : Leggero is missing

Thomas : What?

Kwalunga : Yeah I need to find him

Thomas : Of course. We are coming

Kwalunga : There is no need. I know who took him and she is harmless

Thomas : You don't know who she is working with

Kwalunga : You right but don't worry about it. Keep Red running and I will handle this

Thomas : Ok cool.

(I hung up and dialed again)

Kwalunga : Nazareth I need you. My son is missing

(I hung up)

(It's time to show Lonwabo who is Kwalunga Hlela)

Kwalunga : Sky give me my gun Sweetheart

Sky : Ok baby

Kwalunga : Regalo?

Regalo : Dad

Kwalunga : I'm sorry son

Regalo : You have every right to be angry so I understand.

Kwalunga : Thanks my boy

Regalo : Dad?

Kwalunga : Yes my boy

Regalo : Please come back home. Alive

Kwalunga : I promise you that I will son

Regalo : Mom was right. You are a King baba and I'm proud to have you as my father

(I smiled)

Kwalunga : I wasn't born a King my boy. I made myself a King

Regalo : And you made mom your Queen. Leggero and I are your Princes.

Kwalunga : And I will die for all of you.

Regalo : Please make sure the young prince is back home alive

Kwalunga : I will. Now can I trust you to take care of yourself and your mother while I'm gone?

Regalo : Yes dad

Kwalunga : That's my boy.

Sky : Here is your gun

(I took it and cocked it)

Kwalunga : I'm out of here

Sky : Morgan?

Kwalunga : Sky?

Sky : I love you

Kwalunga : I love you more Sweetheart

(I walked out and Nazareth was waiting for me outside the gate)

Kwalunga : Where is your car? How did you get here?

Nazareth : You call I come. It doesn't matter how

Kwalunga : Get it in the car

Nazareth : Who took your son?

Kwalunga : Some bitch who wants my attention.

Nazareth : Ex?

Kwalunga : No label. We fucked once and she got obsessed

Nazareth : Nibhebha yonke into Hlela. Yazi nizofa. Who are we dealing with?

Kwalunga : She is harmless.

Nazareth : You'll never know Madlula

Kwalunga : Nazare. I know

Nazareth : And I'm sure you knew that she is capable of kidnapping your son

Kwalunga : No I didn't. Nazareth that's why I called you. In case I need back up

Nazareth : Admit it. You don't know this woman while I'm gone?

Regalo : Yes dad

Kwalunga : That's my boy.

Sky : Here is your gun

(I took it and cocked it)

Kwalunga : I'm out of here

Sky : Morgan?

Kwalunga : Sky?

Sky : I love you

Kwalunga : I love you more Sweetheart

(I walked out and Nazareth was waiting for me outside the gate)

Kwalunga : Where is your car? How did you get here?

Nazareth : You call I come. It doesn't matter how

Kwalunga : Get it in the car

Nazareth : Who took your son?

Kwalunga : Some bitch who wants my attention.

Nazareth : Ex?

Kwalunga : No label. We fucked once and she got obsessed

Nazareth : Nibhebha yonke into Hlela. Yazi nizofa. Who are we dealing with?

Kwalunga : She is harmless.

Nazareth : You'll never know Madlula

Kwalunga : Nazare. I know

Nazareth : And I'm sure you knew that she is capable of kidnapping your son

Kwalunga : No I didn't. Nazareth that's why I called you. In case I need back up

Nazareth : Admit it. You don't know this woman You just know her pussy. That's all.

Kwalunga : Yeah right.

(He opened his bag and took out his AK47 and cocked it)

Kwalunga : What about the police?

(He took out his cigarette and started smoking)

Nazareth : I don't care.

(He puffed the cigarette smoke on my face)

Kwalunga : You son of a bitch

(He laughed out loud)

Nazareth : Let's go get them son. Ngibafuna one by one

(Nazareth is crazy)

Kwalunga : Nazare. We are not going there to kill.

Nazareth : Speak for yourself

Kwalunga : I mean it Nazareth. If there is no need to kill we won't kill.

Nazareth : She kidnapped your son so of course there's need to kill

Kwalunga : I get that but she meant no harm. She just wants my attention

Nazareth : Stop this car.

Kwalunga : Why?

Nazareth : Because I say so.

(This guy is crazy and he wants me to be part of it. I stopped the car)

Kwalunga : Talk to me

Nazareth : Kwalunga tell me something. Why are we going there?

Kwalunga : To get my son

Nazareth : Why don't you call the cops to sort this out?

Kwalunga : Because he is my son

Nazareth : So what's gonna happen when we get there? You are going to take your son and fuck her for kidnapping your son?

Kwalunga : No

Nazareth : What are you going to do with her? How are you going to punish her for taking your son?

(I sighed)

Nazareth : You don't know? Kwalunga do you still love her?

Kwalunga : No I don't

Nazareth : Good because I am going to kill her.

Kwalunga : Fine.

(I drove off)

Chapter 65

(We arrived at the Hotel. Vatican style Rome)

Kwalunga : You won't get in carrying that gun

Nazareth : Why not?

Kwalunga : This is a Hotel Nazare not a
Gangster Zone

Nazareth : Wait for me here

(I waited and waited. He came back 20
minutes later)

Nazareth : Clear. We are going in. You have
your gun?

Kwalunga : Sure

Nazareth : Good

Kwalunga : Where were you?

Nazareth : Bribing the security. They won't
search us

Kwalunga : You are fucked up

Nazareth : I know

(He packed his gun and took his bag)

Kwalunga : Let's go

(We arrived at the door and he took out his gun and I reached for mine. We knocked)

Lonwabo : Who is that?

Kwalunga : Servizio in camera (Room service)

(Silence)

(The door opened and I got in first.
Nazareth followed)

Kwalunga : Where is my son?

(I was pointing my gun at the back of her head)

Lonwabo : Please don't kill me Lunga. Your Son is safe

Kwalunga : Where is he?

Lonwabo : With Aleksei

Nazareth : Kill this bitch Kwalunga

(Aleksei? I froze. She slowly turned around and she was shocked seeing Nazareth)

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo?

Nazareth : Lonwabo?

(What the fuck is going on here?)

Kwalunga : Skhumbuzo? Wait. You guys know each other?

Nazareth : This is my wife Kwalunga. Lonwabo ufunani la?

(Lonwabo started crying)

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo please listen to me sthandwa sami

Nazareth : Listen to what exactly?

Lonwabo : You left me Skhumbuzo. Zange waya e Germany?

Nazareth : I came back home to you every month. What the fuck do you want from me? I paid Lobola for you

Kwalunga : Lonwabo I want my son

Nazareth : Wait! Wait! Kwalunga were you talking about my wife? You slept with my wife?

(Now his gun was pointed at me)

Kwalunga : I didn't know she was your wife!!

Nazareth : Lonwabo I'm going to kill you.

Lonwabo : Kill me Skhumbuzo! Ndibulale!
Ngoku! You don't need me anyway. You have your wife right? Yes I know about your first wife. Your mother told me everything

(Nazareth lowered his gun)

Nazareth : Is that why you cheated on me?
Because you found out about my first wife?

(I don't want to listen to this. I just want my son. How did Aleksei get hold of my son?)

Lonwabo : Yes! And I don't want to marry you anymore

Nazareth : Ngelosi yami ngilalele.
Ngingachaza

Lonwabo : Explain what? That you lied to me?

Kwalunga : Lonwabo just give me my son so that I can go

Nazareth : Kwalunga just wait!!... Ngelosi yami let's go home and fix things. I will do anything you want please don't leave me

Lonwabo : No. I've found somebody else and I can't be with you anymore. Go back to your wife

Nazareth : You found somebody else? You mean Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : No!!!

Honey what's going on here?

(That was Aleksei walking in with Leggero. I couldn't believe it)

Kwalunga : Give me my son!!

(I pointed my gun at him)

Lonwabo : Baby please give him his son. It's over

(Baby?)

Nazareth : Baby? Uthi Baby?

(Nazareth was going crazy)

Aleksei : Ty ubit Gadaffi (You killed Gadaffi)

Kwalunga : And I will kill you too if you don't give me my son

(Nazareth was banging the walls)

Aleksei : Fine! Take him

(He gave me Leggero and I held my son. It felt like a dream)

Nazareth : You russian bastard. Are you sleeping with my wife?

(Nazareth punched Aleksei. He kept punching him and the moment I saw blood I knew that I had to intervene)

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo stop!!!!

(She was crying)

Kwalunga : Lonwabo hold Leggero

(I dragged Skhumbuzo from Aleksei)

Kwalunga : Nazareth stop man!!

Nazareth : He is fucking my wife!!! Let me kill him

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo please sthandwa sami.
Please leave him

Nazareth : Uyisfebe wena Lonwabo.
Uyisfebe. You sleep around with every man .
Your father should be ashamed of you

Lonwabo : I'm sorry Skhu. I'm sorry

Nazareth : Don't touch me!!!

(I didn't expect things to turn out like this)

Nazareth : And you (He kicked Aleksei) You
can have this bitch. I don't want her
anymore. I don't fuck with bitches. Kwalunga
let's go

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo I'm sorry. Lunga
please talk to him

Kwalunga : Nazareth is right Uyisfebe
Lonwabo. I thought you were different but

No. You are the most fucked up woman I ever met

(Nazareth packed his gun and walked out with his bag)

Lonwabo : Skhu I'm sorry please wait

Kwalunga : Leave him Lonwabo. You found somebody else right?

(I headed out with my son)

Aleksei : Lunga?

(I watched Aleksei laying down on the floor with blood covering his face. Nazareth did a wonderful job here)

Kwalunga : What?

Aleksei : On chut' ne ubil menya. Ty spas menya (He almost killed me. You saved me)

(He coughed)

Aleksei : Spasibo (Thank you)

Kwalunga : V sleduyushchiy raz ya ub'yu tebya sam (Next time I will kill you myself)

(I walked out with my son)

(Nazareth was screaming and banging the ground with his fist at the parking lot. He is devastated and I get it)

Kwalunga : Nazare!!

(I quickly placed Unga on his seat and went to Nazareth. His hands were covered in blood)

Kwalunga : Nazareth!! Skhu!!

(He stopped and looked at me)

Kwalunga : Please stop

Nazareth : Why? Why did she do that?

Kwalunga : She is a bitch and she doesn't deserve you

Nazareth : She doesn't. Fuck! She doesn't

Kwalunga : Yes

(He looked at his hands)

Kwalunga : I do have an extra pair of gloves to cover that shit

(He laughed and I helped him up)

Nazareth : Ngiyabonga Madlula. I almost killed that bastard

Kwalunga : No problem man

Nazareth : Please take me to my house

Kwalunga : Are you sure that you will be fine?

Nazareth : I will never kill myself over a bitch if that's what you mean

(We laughed and got inside the car)

(When a woman decides to take revenge even the devil sits down and takes notes indeed. I respect women)

Sponsored

(We arrived at the Hotel. Vatican style Rome)

Kwalunga : You won't get in carrying that gun

Nazareth : Why not?

Kwalunga : This is a Hotel Nazare not a Gangster Zone

Nazareth : Wait for me here

(I waited and waited. He came back 20 minutes later)

Nazareth : Clear. We are going in. You have your gun?

Kwalunga : Sure

Nazareth : Good

Kwalunga : Where were you?

Nazareth : Bribing the security. They won't search us

Kwalunga : You are fucked up

Nazareth : I know

(He packed his gun and took his bag)

Kwalunga : Let's go

(We arrived at the door and he took out his gun and I reached for mine. We knocked)

Lonwabo : Who is that?

Kwalunga : Servizio in camera (Room service)

(Silence)

(The door opened and I got in first.
Nazareth followed)

Kwalunga : Where is my son?

(I was pointing my gun at the back of her head)

Lonwabo : Please don't kill me Lunga. Your Son is safe

Kwalunga : Where is he?

Lonwabo : With Aleksei

Nazareth : Kill this bitch Kwalunga

(Aleksei? I froze. She slowly turned around and she was shocked seeing Nazareth)

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo?

Nazareth : Lonwabo?

(What the fuck is going on here?)

Kwalunga : Skhumbuzo? Wait. You guys know each other?

Nazareth : This is my wife Kwalunga. Lonwabo ufunani la?

(Lonwabo started crying)

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo please listen to me
sthandwa sami

Nazareth : Listen to what exactly?

Lonwabo : You left me Skhumbuzo. Zange
waya e Germany?

Nazareth : I came back home to you every
month. What the fuck do you want from me?
I paid Lobola for you

Kwalunga : Lonwabo I want my son

Nazareth : Wait! Wait! Kwalunga were you
talking about my wife? You slept with my
wife?

(Now his gun was pointed at me)

Kwalunga : I didn't know she was your wife!!

Nazareth : Lonwabo I'm going to kill you.

Lonwabo : Kill me Skhumbuzo! Ndibulale!
Ngoku! You don't need me anyway. You have
your wife right? Yes I know about your first
wife. Your mother told me everything

(Nazareth lowered his gun)

Nazareth : Is that why you cheated on me?
Because you found out about my first wife?

(I don't want to listen to this. I just want my
son. How did Aleksei get hold of my son?)

Lonwabo : Yes! And I don't want to marry you
anymore

Nazareth : Ngelosi yami ngilalele.
Ngingachaza

Lonwabo : Explain what? That you lied to me?

Kwalunga : Lonwabo just give me my son so that I can go

Nazareth : Kwalunga just wait!!... Ngelosi yami let's go home and fix things. I will do anything you want please don't leave me

Lonwabo : No. I've found somebody else and I can't be with you anymore. Go back to your wife

Nazareth : You found somebody else? You mean Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : No!!!

Honey what's going on here?

(That was Aleksei walking in with Leggero. I couldn't believe it)

Kwalunga : Give me my son!!

(I pointed my gun at him)

Lonwabo : Baby please give him his son. It's over

(Baby?)

Nazareth : Baby? Uthi Baby?

(Nazareth was going crazy)

Aleksei : Ty ubit Gadaffi (You killed Gadaffi)

Kwalunga : And I will kill you too if you don't give me my son

(Nazareth was banging the walls)

Aleksei : Fine! Take him

(He gave me Leggero and I held my son. It felt like a dream)

Nazareth : You russian bastard. Are you sleeping with my wife?

(Nazareth punched Aleksei. He kept punching him and the moment I saw blood I knew that I had to intervene)

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo stop!!!!

(She was crying)

Kwalunga : Lonwabo hold Leggero

(I dragged Skhumbuzo from Aleksei)

Kwalunga : Nazareth stop man!!

Nazareth : He is fucking my wife!!! Let me kill him

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo please sthandwa sami.
Please leave him

Nazareth : Uyisfebe wena Lonwabo.
Uyisfebe. You sleep around with every man .
Your father should be ashamed of you

Lonwabo : I'm sorry Skhu. I'm sorry

Nazareth : Don't touch me!!!

(I didn't expect things to turn out like this)

Nazareth : And you (He kicked Aleksei) You can have this bitch. I don't want her anymore. I don't fuck with bitches. Kwalunga let's go

Lonwabo : Skhumbuzo I'm sorry. Lunga please talk to him

Kwalunga : Nazareth is right Uyisfebe Lonwabo. I thought you were different but No. You are the most fucked up woman I ever met

(Nazareth packed his gun and walked out with his bag)

Lonwabo : Skhu I'm sorry please wait

Kwalunga : Leave him Lonwabo. You found somebody else right?

(I headed out with my son)

Aleksei : Lunga?

(I watched Aleksei laying down on the floor with blood covering his face. Nazareth did a wonderful job here)

Kwalunga : What?

Aleksei : On chut' ne ubil menya. Ty spas menya (He almost killed me. You saved me)

(He coughed)

Aleksei : Spasibo (Thank you)

Kwalunga : V sleduyushchiy raz ya ub'yu tebya sam (Next time I will kill you myself)

(I walked out with my son)

(Nazareth was screaming and banging the ground with his fist at the parking lot. He is devastated and I get it)

Kwalunga : Nazare!!

(I quickly placed Unga on his seat and went to Nazareth. His hands were covered in blood)

Kwalunga : Nazareth!! Skhu!!

(He stopped and looked at me)

Kwalunga : Please stop

Nazareth : Why? Why did she do that?

Kwalunga : She is a bitch and she doesn't deserve you

Nazareth : She doesn't. Fuck! She doesn't

Kwalunga : Yes

(He looked at his hands)

Kwalunga : I do have an extra pair of gloves to cover that shit

(He laughed and I helped him up)

Nazareth : Ngiyabonga Madlula. I almost killed that bastard

Kwalunga : No problem man

Nazareth : Please take me to my house

Kwalunga : Are you sure that you will be fine?

Nazareth : I will never kill myself over a bitch if that's what you mean

(We laughed and got inside the car)

(When a woman decides to take revenge even the devil sits down and takes notes indeed. I respect women)

Chapter 66

(Regalo couldn't stop thanking me for bringing Leggero home safely.)

Sky : What happened exactly yesterday?

Kwalunga : Aleksei and Lonwabo took Leggero. It turned out that Nazareth is Lonwabo's husband and Aleksei is Lonwabo's new boyf.... You know what Sweetheart? It's a long story

(Sky laughed)

Sky : Come on baby. We have all day it's Sunday remember?

Kwalunga : Yes and I don't want to spend my Sunday talking about those idiots. I want to spend my day buried inside your pussy

(Sky giggled while I kissed her neck)

Sky : Baby waaaait. I want to hear about Lonwabo's saga. How is she Nazareth's wife

because Nazareth's wife he came with her years ago to my father's house?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart Nazareth is a Zulu man who can have as many wives as he wants.

(Sky was looking at me with her eyes wide open)

Sky : Morgan I swear if you're thinking about marrying another wife I will kill her

Kwalunga : But you don't want me to fuck you because you want to talk about Lonwabo's saga so taking another wife wouldn't be such a bad idea.

(The way she was staring at me. I laughed)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart listen. You and I will talk as much as you want while my other wife and I fuck as much as I want.

Sky : Morgan I will kill you and that stupid wife

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : I'm just teasing you Sweetheart. I'll never do that to you

(She sighed in relief)

Sky : Thank you baby. I love you

Kwalunga : I love you more Sweetheart

Sky : Baby isn't Aleksei supposed to be in Russia?

Kwalunga : I think he is just around to ensure that Anya is ok.

Sky : Anya?

Kwalunga : Gadaffi's sister. She is still in Rome and owning The house of Arte

Sky : And how are things going with the shelter?

Kwalunga : Very well Sweetheart. I'm opening one in South Africa

Sky : Really baby?

Kwalunga : Jaaaah.

Sky : You don't seem happy about it though.

Kwalunga : Sky I'm thinking of taking you guys to South Africa. I want you to meet my family

Sky : Are you serious?

Kwalunga : Yes but if you don't want to I'll understand

Sky : No baby I want to. Wow I've been waiting my whole life for you to say that. I would love to go to South Africa and meet everyone. When are we going?

(Sky was more happy than I thought)

Kwalunga : I just need to sort out a few things first then we can go.

Sky : Please sort out those things fast. Wow I'm so happy. Let me call my dad and t.... No

Sponsored

not my dad he doesn't know about us. Let me tell my mom

(Regalo walked in holding Leggero's arms)

Kwalunga : Regalo so knocking is no longer a thing?

Regalo : Dad look. Leggero can walk

Kwalunga : You are holding his arms. Why aren't you knocking?

Regalo : Why should I knock? Were you guys having sex?

(This boy will be the death of me. Sky was giggling)

Sky : Regalo!!

Regalo : What Mah? I know these things.
Please move a bit Dad

(He is asking me to move in my own bed. Him and Leggero were now comfortable in our bed. In the middle of us)

Kwalunga : Is there a problem with your beds?

Regalo : No. We just miss you and mom

(My boys drive me crazy but fuck I love them and my life is nothing without them)

Sky : Aaah baby! I love you

(She kissed Regalo's and Leggero on their cheeks)

Regalo : I love you too mom but I love dad more (He laughed)

Kwalunga : That's my boy. Here. Here

(We fist bump)

Sky : It's ok. Leggero loves me more than all of you. Right my angel?

(Leggero laughed and sucked his fingers)

Sky : Yeah right. Right baby

(She squeezed Leggero in her arms)

Kwalunga : Regalo we are going to South Africa

Regalo : For real?

Sky : Yes baby. You are going to meet your grandparents and your aunt

(Regalo was so excited that he jumped in my bed. I guess I'm the only one who hates going to South Africa)

Sky : As soon as we come back we are going to visit mio Nonna and Nonno in Spain

Kwalunga : Your grandmother and grandfather ?

Sky : Yes my love. I last saw them when I was 15 years old

Kwalunga : You have grandparents?

(She laughed)

Sky : Yes baby

Kwalunga : You so lucky sweetheart

Regalo : No. I'm lucky to have you and mom

Kwalunga : And we are lucky to have you and young champ here

(I kissed Leggero's hand)

Sky : This is so beautiful. I never thought my life would turn out like this. Morgan?

Kwalunga : Yes Sweetheart

Sky : I love you so much and Thank you baby.

Kwalunga : Come here. Regalo close your eyes

Regalo : Jeez dad! You guys are always kissing

(I kissed Sky)

Regalo : Can I open my eyes now?

Kwalunga : It's not like you closed them anyway

(We laughed)

Regalo : Dad why does mom call you Morgan?

Sky : I'm going downstairs to prepare breakfast.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Come on Star. Tell our son about Morgan

(Sky laughed)

Sky : We buried Star a long time ago

Kwalunga : Damn! I loved Star. The things she did to me.

(She giggled)

Sky : Morgan!!

Kwalunga : What Sweetheart? They have no idea what I'm talking about

Regalo : I get it. Forget about this Morgan and Star. Jesus! Dad you need a prayer

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : Regalo please take Leggero and get out of our room

Regalo : We are not going anywhere.

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I'm hungry now

Regalo : Me too

Sky : It's always the two of you that are hungry. Leggero and I are never hungry

Regalo : And only Dad and I are tall here. Do you blame us?

Sky : Oh please Regalo. I've heard enough of that

(We laughed. This is how I imagined my life with my Sunflower Zinzi. Us and our beautiful kids but God had other plans not that I'm complaining. I'm still blessed here)

Chapter 67

(AT TRUE RED)

Thomas :You are taking them to South Africa?

Kwalunga : Yes Thomas so I need leave.

Thomas : I also need leave Lunga. Mia is pregnant

Kwalunga : Are you serious bro?

Anthony : I'm just glad he didn't impregnate Tina

Thomas : She is so angry

Kwalunga : Why? She is Agatino's girlfriend and it's not like you guys were in a relationship or something

Anthony : Exactly. Thomas's dick is still there if that's what she is worried about and she can still have it

Kwalunga : Caldo you are crazy bro

Thomas : I can't lose Mia and the way Tina is carrying herself lately I swear she will fuck things up for me.

Anthony : I told you to end things with her.

Thomas : That's what I did and she got angry. I like her but I love Mia and I won't allow anything to come between us

(He sighed)

Anthony : Things are getting out of hand and you need to sort out this shit before it's too late Thomas.

Thomas : I know. Lunga please talk to her my brother

Kwalunga : Me?

Thomas : Please if you do this for me.I promise to organize a jet for you and your family to South Africa

Kwalunga : For real?

Thomas : Yes for real

Anthony : Webabo! Lunga is going to fuck things up for you even more

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : We have a deal. Wait here

(I went to Tina's office and she was crying)

Kwalunga : Harris

(She smiled and wiped her tears)

Tina : Lunga

Kwalunga : Come here

(She stood up and I hugged her and she started crying all over again)

Kwalunga : Everything is going to be alright.
Ok?

Tina : How Lunga?

(I sat down and she sat on my lap. She is like a sister to me so I don't mind)

Kwalunga : You do know that Thomas likes you. right?

Tina : Yes

Kwalunga : And you do know that this thing of you guys is no longer about fucking with no strings attached. Am I wrong?

Tina : I don't know how things escalated so fast. We should have stopped the moment we realized that we were falling for each other

Kwalunga : But you guys continued. Tina what I mean is that as much as you guys love each other but the truth is you both are in relationships. Thomas has Mia and you have Agatino. You knew about Mia and Thomas knew about Agatino so you cannot blame Thomas for impregnating his girlfriend.

Tina : He said it was a mistake

Kwalunga : You know that is not true. Ok fine let's say it's true what's going to happen now?

Tina : I don't know Lunga

Kwalunga : If you love Thomas that much why are you still with Agatino?

Tina : Because I see my life with Agatino and I love Agatino more than I love Thomas plus there was no way Thomas was going to leave Mia because of me.

Kwalunga : Because Thomas loves Mia more than he loves you. Don't you think?

Tina : I know so.

Kwalunga : Let's just face it Tina. You guys are sexually attracted to each other nothing more. Thomas is not the who is pregnant so you can continue fucking his dick but let me warn you this thing of you guys will backfire one day. Now ask yourself if it is worth it.

Tina : I love Agatino

Kwalunga : And Thomas loves Mia so stop blaming Thomas.

Tina : I just don't want to lose Thomas

Kwalunga : But you are going to lose him.
What if Agatino walked in here and found you crying? What were you going to say to him?

(Silence)

Kwalunga : You make things so obvious Tina. You know when I first joined Red I thought that you guys were married or something. The way you spoke to Thomas and the way you touched him it was so obvious that something is going on between you two. Agatino is going to find out about this little secret very soon and trust me you are not going to lose Thomas only but Agatino too. Is that what you want?

Tina : No. Are we that obvious?

Kwalunga : Yes. Remember the day when we went to the pub How you were angry because Mia was there? That was not on Tina. You took Mia's man and not the other way around

(She sighed)

Tina : You right

Kwalunga : If you still want to be with Thomas then pull yourself together or leave Thomas with his girlfriend and focus on your relationship with Agatino.

Tina : Thank you Lunga. I'm going to leave Thomas and focus on what I have with my Agatino

Kwalunga : Is that you speaking or anger?

(She laughed)

Tina : Trust me it's me.

Kwalunga : Good. Give me a hug

(She squeezed me and laughed)

Kwalunga : Ok I can't breathe now

(We laughed and she kissed my forehead
before she stood up)

Kwalunga : I'm going home in 3 days

Tina : South Africa?

Kwalunga : Yeah. With my wife and my boys

Tina : That's nice

Kwalunga : I guess

Tina : You don't want to go. Do you?

Kwalunga : I don't have a choice. I have to do this

Tina : Ok. How is my baby Leggero? Thomas told about what happened and I'm sorry

Kwalunga : I found him alive and that's all that matters

Tina : True

Kwalunga : I need to get back to work

Tina : Thank you Lunga. I feel better now

Kwalunga : Whenever you wanna talk I'm available.

(She smiled)

Tina : Thank you so much

(I walked out and went back to my office)

Thomas : And?

Kwalunga : Don't worry she is done fucking with you

Thomas : Thank goodness. Did she say that?

Kwalunga : Uhu! She is going to focus on her relationship with Agatino

Anthony : About time. Now I can plan our trip to Spain

Thomas : Spain?

Anthony : Yes. Just us the three of us

Kwalunga : My wife and I are going to Spain as soon as we come back from South Africa

Anthony : For real?

Kwalunga : Yes to see her grandparents but I want us to get married first then we can go

(Anthony whistles)

Anthony : About time bro. We waited for so long

Kwalunga : What do you mean when you say we?

Anthony : We. I mean us Reds

Thomas : Anthony is right. We waited for so long

Kwalunga : Wait no more. We are doing this next month

Anthony : You know what I think?

Thomas : No we don't.

Kwalunga : Whatever it is I just hope it's not crazy

Anthony : We are all going to Spain with our partners.

Thomas : I love that.

Kwalunga : Me too

Anthony : Yeeees! I'll tell Tina

Thomas : You do that later. Lunch is over
let's get back to work

Anthony : Jeez! Thomas can't you give us 15
more minutes

Thomas : No

Kwalunga : Don't forget about our deal
Thomas

(He laughed)

Thomas : Relax I won't. When are you
leaving

Kwalunga : In 3 days

Thomas : Cool. Don't worry about coming to work in the next 2 days

Kwalunga : Wow thanks man.

Anthony : Wow. Thomas I need leave too

Thomas : Oh really? Why?

Anthony : I think one of the girls I'm fucking with is pregnant

Thomas : Why do you think so?

Anthony : I have morning sickness and I've been dreaming about babies lately

Thomas : As soon as you know which one is really pregnant we will talk but for now get back to work

Anthony : I think I'm going to throw up.
Please excuse me

(We laughed . Anthony is crazy and I'm surely going to miss him)

Chapter 68

(3 DAYS LATER)

(We finally made it to Kwa Maphumulo with my Italians. Regalo was asking me questions about everything and Sky was blown away by South African beauty)

Mthunzi : You did well Kwalunga. I'm proud of you son

Kwalunga : I didn't have a choice baba

Regalo : Grandpa are those cows all yours

Mthunzi : Yes Mfan'wam

Regalo : Why?

(Mthunzi laughed)

Mthunzi : Because I love them

Regalo : Please give me 2 of them

Mthunzi : I will give you all of them

Regalo : Dad I don't want to go back to Italy.
I want to stay here with my grandparents
and look after my cows

Regalo come here

(That was Sthe)

Regalo : Aunt Theh I've been looking for you.
You promised me Guavas

Sthembele : I know boy boy but I was putting
your brother to sleep

Kwalunga : Sthe uphi u Sky?

Sthembele : She is with u Mah umaMyeni.
She is teaching her something somewhere

Kwalunga : u Mah engadlali ngo mfazi wami

Sthembele : Relax u maDas u right bafo

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Is that how you call my wife now.
maDas?

Sthembele : We call Mah u maMyeni so why not?

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Regalo go with Aunty Sthe

Sthembele : Come boy boy. I want you to teach me Italian

(We laughed and they walked away)

Mthunzi : Kumele sishise impepho sibabike kwabaphansi

Kwalunga : I don't know Baba omncane. These people are Italians and they don't know such things

Mthunzi : Your wife is an Italian who wants to marry a Zulu man. It's time for her to

learn how we do things around here. I will speak to her

Kwalunga : Kulungile baba omncane

Mthunzi : She is very beautiful. Nabazukulu bami nabo bahle but you never told us anything about Inkosana yakho. I thought you didn't have any child except Ung' thembile

(He is right. I never told them anything about Regalo)

Kwalunga : Jah I know

Mthunzi : Usubona ngobude nje ukuthi owakho otherwise akanalutho nje ekhombisa ukuthi uyindoda yomzulu. How old is he?

(Jesus! That's because he is not Zulu baba)

Kwalunga : He is 13

Mthunzi : Ngigugile impela but I know that you've been to Italy for less than 13 years

Kwalunga : Baba omncane. Regalo is not my biological son. I adopted him

Mthunzi : Ngobani? Are you not man enough to make your own kids?

Kwalunga : Baba please listen

Mthunzi : Listen to what? Uhlulwa ukumithisa Kwalunga? Ukuthatha umfazi umgingqe phansi umfake ipipi emithe. Yini enzima lapho?

Kwalunga : That's very rich coming from you baba omncane. I don't see your children here. Where are they?

(I hear gulps)

Kwalunga : I'm not the problem. My wife can't have kids baba omncane just like your wife umaMyeni angithi naye she can't give you kids?

Mthunzi : Kwalunga I'm your father and you can't speak to me like that

Kwalunga : Ngiyaxolisa baba

Mthunzi : I'm sorry too. Sometimes I feel like this family is cursed. Like all of us are cursed except that devil u Manqoba

(I looked at him. It was the first time I heard him speaking about his brother like that)

Kwalunga : What do you mean baba?

Mthunzi : I do have a child but his mother killed him

Kwalunga : maMyeni?

(He shook his head)

Mthunzi : No. My first love. We met in uMlazi and we fell in love. A year later she fell pregnant and we were so happy but I had to leave her because I had had to go and join uMkhonto weSizwe. I told her that I'll come back for her and our baby. I told her how much I loved her. 4 months later I just woke up and left everything because I didn't want to be part of uMkhonto weSizwe anymore. I wanted to be home with the lover of my life and my baby (He paused)

Mthunzi : I came back and I dropped everything here and took a taxi to u Mlazi. I couldn't wait to see her but when I got there I found out that there was no baby anymore. She aborted my baby Kwalunga because she found somebody and she couldn't keep my baby.

(He laughed. Trying to hide his tears)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane I'm sorry

Mthunzi : Kwalunga we need to talk

Sponsored

I've been looking for you. You promised me
Guavas

Sthembele : I know boy boy but I was putting your brother to sleep

Kwalunga : Sthe uphi u Sky?

Sthembele : She is with u Mah umaMyeni.
She is teaching her something somewhere

Kwalunga : u Mah engadlali ngo mfazi wami

Sthembele : Relax u maDas u right bafo

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Is that how you call my wife now.
maDas?

Sthembele : We call Mah u maMyeni so why
not?

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Regalo go with Aunty Sthe

Sthembele : Come boy boy. I want you to teach me Italian

(We laughed and they walked away)

Mthunzi : Kumele sishise impepho sibabike kwabaphansi

Kwalunga : I don't know Baba omncane. These people are Italians and they don't know such things

Mthunzi : Your wife is an Italian who wants to marry a Zulu man. It's time for her to learn how we do things around here. I will speak to her

Kwalunga : Kulungile baba omncane

Mthunzi : She is very beautiful. Nabazukulu bami nabo bahle but you never told us

anything about Inkosana yakho. I thought you didn't have any child except Ung'thembile

(He is right. I never told them anything about Regalo)

Kwalunga : Jah I know

Mthunzi : Usubona ngobude nje ukuthi owakho otherwise akanalutho nje ekhombisa ukuthi uyindoda yomzulu. How old is he?

(Jesus! That's because he is not Zulu baba)

Kwalunga : He is 13

Mthunzi : Ngigugile impela but I know that you've been to Italy for less than 13 years

Kwalunga : Baba omncane. Regalo is not my biological son. I adopted him

Mthunzi : Ngobani? Are you not man enough to make your own kids?

Kwalunga : Baba please listen

Mthunzi : Listen to what? Uhlulwa ukumithisa Kwalunga? Ukuthatha umfazi umgingqe phansi umfake ipipi emithe. Yini enzima lapho?

Kwalunga : That's very rich coming from you baba omncane. I don't see your children here. Where are they?

(I hear gulps)

Kwalunga : I'm not the problem. My wife can't have kids baba omncane just like your wife umaMyeni angithi naye she can't give you kids?

Mthunzi : Kwalunga I'm your father and you can't speak to me like that

Kwalunga : Ngiyaxolisa baba

Mthunzi : I'm sorry too. Sometimes I feel like this family is cursed. Like all of us are cursed except that devil u Manqoba

(I looked at him. It was the first time I heard him speaking about his brother like that)

Kwalunga : What do you mean baba?

Mthunzi : I do have a child but his mother killed him

Kwalunga : maMyeni?

(He shook his head)

Mthunzi : No. My first love. We met in u Mlazi and we fell in love. A year later she fell pregnant and we were so happy but I had to leave her because I had had to go and join uMkhonto weSizwe. I told her that I'll come back for her and our baby. I told her how much I loved her. 4 months later I just woke up and left everything because I didn't want to be part of u Mkhonto weSizwe anymore. I wanted to be home with the lover of my life and my baby (He paused)

Mthunzi : I came back and I dropped everything here and took a taxi to u Mlazi. I couldn't wait to see her but when I got there I found out that there was no baby anymore. She aborted my baby Kwalunga because she found somebody and she couldn't keep my baby.

(He laughed. Trying to hide his tears)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane I'm sorry

Mthunzi : Kwalunga we need to talk my boy
and we need to talk about a lot of things.
Things that might change everything

Kwalunga : I understand baba omncane.

Mthunzi : I just hope you will understand.
Just go and eat so that we can talk.

(He started to walk away)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane?

Mthunzi : Yes?

Kwalunga : I understand what it feels like
losing a baby because I lost mine too. She

killed my baby baba omncane and after that I wasn't sure if I wanted to have kids of my own because I was scared baba. I was scared that I would find somebody who will do the same thing again. I was scared that I would have to go through that path again. That pain again. When maDas told me that she can't have kids I said fuck it. I don't want to have kids of my own anymore

(I laughed and bit my lips. Trying to fight back my own tears)

Mthunzi : I'm so sorry ndodana. It's ok to cry mfan'wam. Uyangizwa? Come here

(He pressed me on his shoulder and I felt at home. I felt safe in the hands of my father. This is what I wanted when I was kid. Someone who would tell me that it's ok to cry.)

Chapter 69

(I was busy going through an old photo album when Sky walked in wrapping a scarf around her shoulders and a doek tied on her head. She was holding a small basin. I laughed)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart what 's going on?

Sky : Please wash your hands and I will bring your food

(She was speaking to me with her head bowed)

Kwalunga : Sky. Look at me

Sky : Mah doesn't look at father's eyes. It's disrespectful

(These people are fucking up my wife)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart. I'm not baba and you are not Mah

Sky : I'm your wife

Kwalunga : Please sit down

(She sat down next to me)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart listen. I don't want you to do all this. You are my wife and I don't want you to change the woman I fell in love with

Sky : Morgan I want to do this. When we are here I need to do this. This is not Italy baby and things are different here. I need to fit in. People in this community need to see me as your wife. I need to respect myself You and your ancestors. When we go back to Italy everything will go back to normal

(I don't feel like I'm talking to Sky right now. I don't know this person)

Kwalunga : Who told you all that? Did Mah put you up for this?

Sky : I read about it before we came here. I did my research Morgan. Please allow me to do this.

Kwalunga : Ok fine.

Sky : Thank you baby

Kwalunga : And Baba omncane? Did he say anything to you?

Sky : He did and we will do it. The traditional wedding too. I know about it and we will do it.

(I'm shocked)

Kwalunga : Traditional wedding?

Sky : We need to do things the right way

Kwalunga : Yeah

Sky : I'll bring food for you

Kwalunga : No I'm fine. Thanks sweetheart

Sky : Are you ok?. You seem..... Tense

Kwalunga : This place does that to me. I need to speak to baba and sweetheart please get some rest

Sky : I will. Lunga I love you

Kwalunga : I know and I love you too

(I walked out and it was already dark outside. Mthunzi was busy making fire behind the rondavel)

Mthunzi : Ung'thembile is just like you. Lazy

Kwalunga : Never in my life have I ever been lazy

(I sat down with my knees up)

Mthunzi : When you were a baby. You were very lazy

Kwalunga : I didn't know that

Mthunzi : And then you grew up. You woke up at dawn and cycled

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Where is my bicycle anyway? You bought it for me. Right?

Mthunzi : I did. The hobos stole it

Kwalunga : They still come here?

Mthunzi : Jah but it has been a while now

Kwalunga : They are scared of your sjambok baba

(He laughed)

Mthunzi : No. Someone opened up a shelter and that's where they stay now

(I am that someone)

Kwalunga : Kungcono. Baba omncane why am I here?

Mthunzi : Jah about that.

(He sat down opposite me and cracked his fingers. I couldn't see his face properly because of the fire that separated us)

Mthunzi : There is no easy way to say this so I'll just get to it. Kwalunga something happened years ago and eventually it affected all of us.

Kwalunga : I'm listening

Sponsored

baba omncane

Mthunzi : Do you remember what we spoke about earlier today?

Kwalunga : About your baby?

Mthunzi : Yes that and more. The woman I was telling you about is your mother. Hluliwe

(For a moment I thought I was dreaming. I closed my eyes and opened them again. No I wasn't dreaming)

Kwalunga : What?

Mthunzi : Yes. Hluliwe was my first love. We dated for a few months and I thought she was the one for me and I was so sure that when I come back from the military I was going to marry her but she left me after she met with my brother Mzwandile. I told you that I was part of u Mkhonto we sizwe and 4 months later when I came back she was in a relationship with Mzwandile.

Kwalunga : My mother is the woman who killed your baby?

Mthunzi : Yes. She did what she had to do Kwalunga and clearly I wasn't enough for her. Mzwandile loved her. I saw it in his eyes and I knew that I needed to let her go. Hluliwe loved him more than she loved me because If she loved me she wasn't going to get rid of my baby

Kwalunga : Why did she have to kill your baby? I don't understand and why would baba take your girlfriend?

Mthunzi : She thought I wasn't going to come back. That's what she told me and nobody knew about Hluliwe and I. I was waiting for the right moment to introduce her to my mother and my brothers.

Kwalunga : You don't deserve what my mother did to you.

Mthunzi : We were not made for each other.

(Silence)

Kwalunga : But that has got nothing to do with me Baba omncane

Mthunzi : Your mother fell pregnant with Mzwandile's baby but she had a miscarriage. 3 months later she fell pregnant again and same thing happened. Again with their 3rd and 4th the same thing happened. They lost all four babies.

Kwalunga : My mother told me about that.

Mthunzi : Yeah. After the fourth one we suspected that something was wrong. Mzwandile cried every day and night. I remember when I found him trying to commit suicide. He had 20 pills in his hand but luckily I arrived on time and I stopped him.

(He paused and cracked his fingers again)

Mthunzi : Our mother said No we need to take him to Isangoma. She said " Bafana bami

I can't die and leave your brother like this.
Help him so that I can die in peace"

Kwalunga : What happened to my
grandparents?

Mthunzi : Your grandmother died just before
you were born and your grandfather (He
paused) We don't know him and we never met
him. Nobody knows where he is and our
mother didn't want to talk about him so we
don't know our father Kwalunga and my
brothers have died without knowing anything
about him.

Kwalunga : That's bad baba

Mthunzi : I know but we were fine without
him and none of us bothered to look for him.

Kwalunga : What happened after the fourth miscarriage?

Mthunzi : We went to Isangoma and Isangoma told us that Mzwandile could never have kids with your mother. I remember how angry Mzwandile was. Sabuza ukuthi ngobani? And that sangoma told us ukuthi ingoba your mother destroyed my seed. Imbewu yokuqala yesizukulwane saka Hlela. Your mother was the chosen one for me. Wayekhethwe abaphansi ukuthi ebengowami but Mzwandile took her away from me. Wathukuthelisa abaphansi and they cursed him ngenzalo yakhe.

Kwalunga : But I was born eventually so how did you stop the curse?

Mthunzi : We didn't. One day Manqoba came back home drunk and they fought with

Mzwandile. Mzwandile left home that night and came back the next day . I used to wake up early ngiyophuzisa izinkomo and when I woke up I opened my window and I saw Manqoba coming out of Mzwandile's room.

Kwalunga : What was he doing there?

Mthunzi : I called him to come to my room and explain to me what he was doing there. He told me that he just wanted to apologize to Mzwandile ngathi mina aw yebo na? Wathi ehhe. I knew he was hiding something from me so as soon as he left I went to check on Hluliwe and I found her crying. Her neck had bruises. I asked what happened? And she told me that Manqoba raped her.

(My heart started racing. I took off my gloves and threw them aside)

Kwalunga : That bastard raped my mother and you baba omncane did nothing about it?

Mthunzi : Kwalunga I was trying to protect my family. My mother. My mother was sick and that was going to kill her. Your mother begged me not to say anything to anyone.

Kwalunga : What happened after that?

Mthunzi : That's when Mangoba started hating Mzwandile. They fought every day but after our mother died things got better between them. Your mother started getting sick and we took her to Isangoma. Isangoma told us that there was nothing wrong with her but she was sick and her feet were swollen. She went to the clinic and when she came back she told your father that she was pregnant.

(Silence)

Kwalunga : And?

Chapter 70

Mthunzi : Mzwandile was scared. He said bafo uma u Hluliwe efika ku 5 months without miscarrying this baby I'm going to marry her. I don't want to lie

Sponsored

I was happy that your father couldn't afford to marry your mother. It gave me hope that maybe Hluliwe and I would work things out somehow and be together again but when Mzwandile started speaking about marriage I just knew that it was really over. I knew that it was time for me to move on and get myself a wife. Manqoba was already married to

maNcwane and Mzwandile was speaking about getting married so I was the only one with no direction.

Kwalunga : U Manqoba raped my mother while maNcwane was around?

Mthunzi : Yes. Manqoba is my brother and I love him but he was a devil. maNcwane started treating your mother so badly and your mother decided to go back to u Mlazi and stay with her family. She only came back after they got married noMzwandile. wena wawuna 7 years old ngaleso skhathi. Every time I looked at you I wished that you were mine and Hluliwe. Basithembile and Sthembele didn't like you and things got worse and worse everyday. I couldn't stand the violence and everything else that was happening so I took Kayise and we went away for a while.

Kwalunga : Kayise?

Mthunzi : maMyeni. I took my wife and went to stay in Hambanathi for a while. We tried for a baby and we had no luck. One day I was on my way home from work and there was this one woman who used to sit on the side of the road and sell chicken heads and feet. Kayise loved chicken feet so I bought her every day when I was coming back from work. That day that woman was very strange and she said to me "Hlela you won't have any babies until you tell him the truth. You know the truth" I just knew that she was talking about what Mangoba did to Hluliwe but there was no way I was going to tell Mzwandile that. (He paused)

Mthunzi : Kayise and I came back here and we stayed until you were all grown up. Mangoba's cow died and I went to his room to tell him but they were fighting with his wife. I stood outside and listened to them. I heard Hluliwe's name and how they were planning to make her disappear because she wanted to tell Mzwandile the truth. Mangoba convinced his wife that your mother seduced him and they slept together. maNcwane died not knowing the truth. She died without knowing that Mangoba was a monster

Kwalunga : So maNcwane wayengazi lutho nge rape?

Mthunzi : No. The only reason she hated your mother was because she thought Hluliwe wanted to take Mangoba away from her. Mangoba and maNcwane both wanted the same thing which was killing your mother but

they both had different reasons to kill her. maNcwane wanted to kill her to protect her marriage and Manqoba wanted to kill her to hide the truth. Hluliwe was ready to come clean about everything. I was the first person to know the truth. Hluliwe told me everything and then she called a family meeting and she was ready to tell the truth to everyone else. Mzwandile was working the night shift that day and wena wawuka mngani wakho uLwandile.

Kwalunga : That was the night they killed my mother?

Mthunzi : Yes. Yimi ke owayesesele ne qiniso after your mother died. I was scared that Manqoba was going to find out that I knew the truth then kill me so I went to look for a job in Johannesburg.

Kwalunga : Kanti what was the truth baba omncane?

(Silence)

Mthunzi : The truth is.... You killed your father.

Kwalunga : Baba omncane come on. I know that

Mthunzi : Kwalunga you don't get it.
Mzwandile is not your father.

Kwalunga : What?

(I was losing it. I stood up and Mthunzi stood up too)

Mthunzi : Yes. Manqoba is your real father. Kwalunga you killed your father. Your mother was raped and you were conceived.

Kwalunga : No no no. No!!! Manqoba is not my father. Baba omncane please tell me that you are lying. Please

(I held his hands)

Mthunzi : It is true Kwal....

Kwalunga : Noooo!!! Noooo!! No!

(Mthunzi pulled me to his shoulder and pressed me tightly)

Mthunzi : Listen to me Kwalunga. It's over OK? Manqoba is dead and we need to move on with our lives. It's only you and I left here. Imina nawe amadoda aka Hlela asele layikhaya

manje. Kumele sivuse lomuzi Kwalunga. I want babies so please help me. Let's have this ceremony so that our lives can be normal.

(There is something about Mthunzi. He knows how to calm me down)

Kwalunga : I'm fine. I'm fine

(He let go of me and I started pacing around)

Mthunzi : We need to introduce you as Manqoba's son to our ancestors and ask them for forgiveness.

Kwalunga : Manqoba didn't have to treat me that way Baba omncane. He hated me... Baba omncane he was my father! and he didn't have to hate me that way

Mthunzi : No he loved you.He was just angry because he knew that he would never be able to hold you as his son. He wanted to be with your mother so much but that was impossible which was more reason he killed her. He hated seeing Mzwandile with you and your mother

Kwalunga : I'm glad I killed him.

Mthunzi : Kwalunga he is your father and we need to have this ceremony. We need to fix this problem

(I took my gloves and put them back on)

Kwalunga : I don't give a shit anymore. Let sleeping dogs lie Baba.

(I walked away. I felt like my world was shutting down completely)

Chapter 71

(I went back to my room. I just wanted to drown myself in alcohol but there was none. Sky was sleeping and she sat up quickly as soon as I walked in)

Sky : Morgan Are you ok? What was all that noise? Did you fight with your father?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart not now. Where are my boys?

(I took off all of my clothes)

Sky : With Theh. Baby are you ok?

Kwalunga : Tomorrow we are going back to Italy. Pack our bags

Sky : What happened?

Kwalunga : Stop asking me stupid questions woman!!!

Sky : Ok

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I'm sorry I didn't mean that.

(I kissed her and stopped. Maybe sex is what I needed. I didn't have time for foreplay. I just buried my dick inside her but all I heard was Mthunzi's voice in my head "Manqoba raped your mother and you were conceived". "Kwalunga you killed your father". It was too much for me)

Kwalunga : Fuck! Fuck! Fuck!

(I tightened my hand around Sky's neck. No I'm going to kill my wife here. I pulled out and started pacing the room. I was going crazy)

Sky : Morgan you are scaring me baby

Kwalunga : Aaaaaaaaaah!!!!

(I started punching the wall again and again)

Sky : Lunga please stop

(Sky was sobbing and I was out of control. She started screaming)

Sky : Morgan!!!!

(I stopped and my hands were killing me The pain was too much. Maybe that is what I needed The pain was too much. Maybe that is what I needed some physical pain. Mthunzi was knocking and shouting at the door.)

Mthunzi : Kwalunga if you kill that girl I will show you who I am. Open this door!!!

(Sky wrapped me with a towel and she got dressed quickly and opened the door)

Mthunzi : maDas what going on here? Is he hitting you?

Sky : No baba. Morgan will never do that to me

Mthunzi : u Morgan wani ? . Ngibuza lo ukuthi uyakushaya yini? (He yelled)

(Sky was silent. She didn't get that)

Mthunzi : Wee Kwalunga are you hitting women now? Huh?

(He started beating me with his sjambok. I didn't fight back I just let him)

Sky : Baba please stop!! Lunga didn't hurt me. I swear

(He stopped)

Mthunzi : Then what happened here?

Sky : He was just punching the wa... Baba please excuse us. I will speak to my husband

Mthunzi : Oh

(Silence)

Mthunzi : Kwalunga I'm sorry. I thought.. (He paused) It's ok. I'll go

(He walked out and Sky locked the door)

Sky : Baby. Did he hurt you?

Kwalunga : No

Sky : Morgan what's going on?

Kwalunga : I killed my father.

(I didn't even look at her but I know that she was shocked)

Sky : What? How?

Kwalunga : I didn't know that he was my father. My mother was raped and I was born

Sky : But I thought....

Kwalunga : Sky he raped my mother dammit!!
Don't you get it? (I yelled)

Sky : I get it baby. I get it

(She started crying. I took my clothes and
got dressed)

Sky : Lunga where are you going? Baby please
sleep. It's 11h00pm

Kwalunga : You know that I love you. Right?

Sky : Yes baby and please stay with me.

Kwalunga : Everything I did. I did it to
protect myself but now things have changed
sweetheart

Sky : How?

Kwalunga : I thought I was strong enough. I thought Mzwandile did a great job raising me but no. This is not how he raised me. He taught me to be strong and to face all my problems with my head up. He would say "Chin up Kwalunga chin up!!" (I laughed trying to hide my tears) I failed my father Sky

Sky : Baby you didn't fail your father.
Morgan look at me!! Your father is proud of you

Kwalunga : Please take care of my boys and please tell them that I love them so much.

Sky : No Morgan!! No!

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I love you.

(I kissed her forehead and walked out. I headed down to the bush. I walked until I reached a tree where I left Manqoba to die. I sat down. I was waiting for that snake to come and end my life. I deserved to die)

Kwalunga : You know I don't regret killing you Manqoba. I hate you and I want to kill you all over again. I hate knowing that I'm your son. I don't want to live my life knowing that I am Manqoba's son. I want to die so you better send that bloody snake to come and eat me alive. Do it Manqoba!! I'm not going to scream like a bitch as you did. I will die like a man. Send it Manqoba!! Just do it!! I want to... (I paused)

(Something was coming. I could hear it. I closed my eyes and waited to die)

Chapter 73

(Only a few neighbors arrived for the ceremony. Sky was busy washing dishes outside with other women. My phone rang and it was Lwandile)

Kwalunga : Duma

Lwandile : Hlela. Ngyezwa kuthiwa ukhona ndoda

Kwalunga : Yeah man I'm here. I had to come and sort out somethings

Lwandile : My mother told me and I'm sorry I won't make it bro. I'm out of town

Kwalunga : No hard feelings man

Lwandile : I wanted to see your wife and your boys. My mother couldn't stop talking about them and about how gorgeous they are

(I chuckled)

Kwalunga : Relax. We will be back soon for my wedding

Lwandile : Ngizobe ngikangako bafoz (I'll be there)

(Baba omncane was calling me)

Kwalunga : I have to go mfana ka Duma

Lwandile : Sure Madlula

(I went to Mthunzi)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane

Mthunzi : Lalela sekumele uyogeza. I've prepared everything for you. Uzogeza emuva kwendlu kayihlo u Manqoba

Kwalunga : Ngiyabonga baba

Mthunzi : Have you spoken to maDas about changing their names?

Kwalunga : Eish! I forgot about that. I'll speak to her now. Please excuse me

(I went to Sky where she was busy washing dishes)

Kwalunga : Sanibona

Woman 1 : Sawubona Kwalunga. Use muhle kanje namanje ngane ka Hluliwe

(I don't even remember her. I faked a smile)

Woman 2 : Ngangifuna uthandane nengane yami wena but wahamba wayothatha e Italy

(I laughed. I don't remember her as well)

Kwalunga : Uxolo Mah. Sweetheart?

Sky : Yes baby. Are you ok?

Kwalunga : I need to talk to you. Please Follow me

Sky : Please excuse me ladies

(I walked away and she followed me)

Kwalunga : Sthe where is Regalo?

Sthembele : Mina bafo ingane yakho isingihlulile. He went to the shop with his friend. I've been telling him to stay inside the house but akangizwa

Kwalunga : Which friend manje?

Sthembele : u Lizwi waka Gogo u maNgema

Kwalunga : Sisi wami ngicela ungitholele yena bandla. I need to talk to him

Sthembele : Ok bafo

(We entered my room)

Sky : Baby is everything OK?

Kwalunga : Yes Sweetheart. Are you ok?

(I kissed her lips)

Sky : Yes my love but I miss you

Kwalunga : You've been busy with your new friends and you forgot about your man?

(She laughed)

Sky : Come on baby that's not true

Kwalunga : It's not? Come here

Sky : No. You want to fuck me

Kwalunga : No sweetheart. Why are you saying that?

Sky : Look at you baby. You are biting your lips and your voice is more husky

(She giggled)

Kwalunga : Ok you got me. I miss my wife

(I locked the door)

Sky : Lunga I'm busy outside baby

Kwalunga : That can wait

Sky : But ba....

(I pulled her face to mine and crushed my lips to her. I undressed her exposing her soft beautiful body. She wrapped her arms around my neck. I kissed her collarbone and she moaned. I picked her up and placed her in bed)

Kwalunga : Lie back Sweetheart

(I held her knees spreading them wide. I softly bit her clit. Her body trembled. I twirled my tongue around)

Sky : Oh God!

(My dick ached to be inside her.)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart look at me

(She slowly opened her sexy eyes)

Kwalunga : I love you. Ok?

(I slid in. I took her slow and gently.)

Sky : Oh yes baby! Yes! I love you too

(She closed her eyes)

Kwalunga : Keep Your eyes on me Sweetheart
Your eyes on me

(She opened her eyes. I pulled out and I started kissing her between her thighs and ran my tongue to her pussy)

Sky : Oh God! Morgan!

(I thrust my dick inside her and I quickened the pace. She dug her nails on my back and her body vibrated)

Kwalunga!!

(Oh fuck Baba omncane. I stopped and looked at Sky who was softly giggling)

Kwalunga : Sshhh sweetheart

Mthunzi : Kwalunga ukhona la?

Kwalunga : Yes Baba omncane

(I continued taking Sky slow and gently and I felt my dick growing harder inside her. I paid more attention to her soft moans than to Mthunzi)

Mthunzi : Woza phela kumele uyogeza

Kwalunga : Oh shit (I murmured as I cum. I pulled out)

Kwalunga : Ok baba. I'm coming

(Silence. He was gone. I started getting dressed while Sky was still laying in bed)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart look I actually wanted to talk to you about something very important. Today we need to introduce you

and our boys to our ancestors so that they can be able to protect you guys. You and Regalo need Zulu names. You understand?

(She was so confused)

Sky : Yeah I guess

Kwalunga : Good. Now I need to go. Love you

(I walked out)

Mthunzi : You told her?

Kwalunga : Yes Baba

Mthunzi : It took you longer than I thought. Was she giving you a hard time?

Kwalunga : Yeah sort of. Let me go and do this thing. You said at the back of Manqoba's house. Right?

Mthunzi : Yes. Usheshise ngoba kumele sishise impepho manje

Kwalunga : Ok baba

Mthunzi : Kwalunga uyalazi usiko angithi? when you come back you don't look back

Kwalunga : I know baba

Mthunzi : Good. Now go

(I finished with the cleansing and went to the rondavel where everyone was sitting. Impepho was already burning. I sat down next to Regalo)

Regalo : Dad what is that?

Kwalunga : I'll explain everything to you later son

Mthunzi : Kwalunga sondelani nino makoti nezingane

(We went to umsamo. Sky was on her knees holding Leggero in her arms)

(Mthunzi started reciting our clan names)

Mthunzi : Bo Hlela Madlula Hangala Kunene. Imina Indodana yenu u Mthunziwamahlela. Ngina nangu u Mzukulu wenu u Kwalunga no Mndeni wakhe. We know that we upset all of you and we know that you were not happy with the fact that Mzwandile took Hluliwe from me. Siyaxolisa. Sixolisela no Manqoba for what he did to Hluliwe. He disgraced our

family but nansi indodana yakhe manje u Kwalunga we told him the truth as you requested. He has come home and he needs your guidance. His wife and his sons need your guidance too. Niyamazi umzukulu wenu u Basithembile he left a son and that son is now Kwalunga's. His name is Ung'thembile Hlela He is here with us today. Kwalunga found a boy in Italy and he took him in as his son just like he did with Basithembile's son. His name is Regalo Hlela but today simunika igama elisha u Akwandiswe Hlela.

(Regalo and Sky looked at me and we smiled)

Mthunzi : With that name ngithi ukufika kwakhe phakathi kwalelikhaya Akwandiswe ukukhanya nezinhlanhla. With his name we call your blessings upon us. Akwandiswe konke okuhle. Kwalunga didn't just find a son only but he found love too He found woman in

Italy and he wants to marry that woman. She is also here with us today and I'm asking you to welcome her and protect her. Her name is Sky Das but today we welcome her to this family by giving her a new name elithi Lakhanya.

(Sky smiled and blew me a kiss)

Mthunzi : We give her that name because we finally see the light. We give her that name because the future looks promising.

Thokozani bantu abadala. Madlula Kunene
Maqeda ka Nkani ka dabula izizibaMphumela
Nyongo yenyathi.

(Silence)

(A crab walked in and Mthunzi smiled)

Regalo : Dad a crab. Look

Mthunzi : Ufeziwe umsebenzi.

(Everyone else was in bed except Mthunzi and I)

Mthunzi : You saw the crab Kwalunga and that was a sign that our ancestors are happy. The ceremony was a success

Kwalunga : I'm glad. Tomorrow we are going back to Italy baba

Mthunzi : Kanti aren't you going to wait until your traditional wedding?

Kwalunga : No baba. Akwandise need to go back to school. He has been absent for two days already

Mthunzi : So when are you planning to have your traditional wedding?

Kwalunga : We are going to start with the white wedding baba which is next month and then after that we will come back for traditional one

Mthunzi : Ok that's good

Kwalunga : Yeah and Baba I need you to be there for me. Ngicela nifike e Italy for my wedding. Wena no Mah no Sthembele

Mthunzi : We will be there

Kwalunga : Ngiyabonga baba. I will take care of all the traveling costs

Mthunzi : Ngiyabonga nami mfan'wam for everything.

Kwalunga : Hopefully you will have kids now

(He shook his head)

Mthunzi : No. It's too late now. I'm old Kwalunga and so is Kayise. We don't need kids because we already have you and Sthembele

Kwalunga : Yebo baba. I understand

Mthunzi : I'm going to bed now

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Baba it's 19h00

Mthunzi : And I'm tired

Kwalunga : Ok mkhulu

Mthunzi : Vele nguyena

(We laughed and he walked away. I was on my way to my room when I saw maNgema)

Kwalunga : Gogo uyaphi ebsuku?

maNgema : I'm looking for Lizwi. Anikaze nimbone?

Kwalunga : No gogo. He was playing with my son but he left

maNgema : Kanti iphi lengane?

Kwalunga : Let me ask my son gogo. Please wait here

(I went to my room)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart is Regalo awake?

Sky : No baby. Why?

Kwalunga : I need to ask him something

Sky : Can't it wait until tomorrow?

Kwalunga : No sweetheart. Regalo? Regalo?
Akwandiswe?

Regalo : Dad

(He said with his eyes closed. He was
sleeping and I felt bad waking him up)

Kwalunga : Boy where is Lizwi?

Regalo : Lizwi

(He said in his sleep)

Kwalunga : Lizwi. boy boy. Where is he?

Regalo : Where is Lizwi?

(Damn! This boy is sleeping. I shook him gently)

Kwalunga : You were playing with Lizwi and where did he go after that?

Regalo : To his dad (He murmured)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I'll be back now

Sky : Ok baby

(I went out)

Kwalunga : Gogo I'm not sure if I heard right but I think his dad took him

maNgema : Oho! Ay he is safe. Ngiyabonga Hlela

Kwalunga : Let me walk you home. It's not safe here

maNgema : Kanti ungazikhathazi ngami khehla. I'll be fine

Kwalunga : No Gogo. I insist

(We started walking)

maNgema : You have a beautiful family
Kwalunga

Kwalunga : Ngiyabonga Gogo. Their mother is a blessing to me

maNgema : She is a wonderful woman

Kwalunga : After losing my parents she is the only person who kept me going

maNgema : I'm so happy for you Hlela

Kwalunga : Sometimes I wonder nje ukuthi ubaba u Mthunzi u feeler kanjani since he lost his parents. My grandparents

maNgema : Kufanele ukube akulula especially after losing his brothers

Kwalunga : Yebo but abazali ke are very important no matter how old you are.

maNgema : That's true but at least they got to spend some time with their mother even

though it wasn't for long. Washona u
Balungile

(I guess Balungile is my grandmother. We are
making progress)

Kwalunga : It's sad because u Mkhulu wasn't
part of her funeral.

(She stopped walking and looked at me)

maNgema : Ubani yena? U Aloni was at
Balungile's funeral

(I think she meant to say Aaron. My
grandfather's name is Aaron. Now I know)

Kwalunga : Haibo ngempela?

maNgema : He came with his wife from the city. Umfazi wephepha and they didn't stay that long. They left right after the funeral

Kwalunga : Did you speak to them?

maNgema : I wanted to and I wanted to introduce his sons to him but I think he was hiding from them

Kwalunga : Where was he staying gogo?

maNgema : Edolobheni

Kwalunga : Which city?

maNgema : Where everybody hides from their problems.

Kwalunga : Dammit! (I muttered)

(maNgema didn't know which city exactly. It's not going to be easy tracing this man and maybe I should just leave it)

Chapter 74

(We went back to Rome and I missed home as soon as we arrived)

Sky : I think we should visit my grandparents first before we get married

Kwalunga : I don't know Khanya. I'm just tired of traveling Sweetheart

(She insisted that I call her Lakhanya going forward)

Sky : Baby please. Who knows maybe they would love to be part of my wedding

Kwalunga : Ok fine we can go

(She kissed me)

Sky : Thank you baby

Kwalunga : I'm exhausted and I need to get some sleep. I can't believe I'm going back to work tomorrow

Sky : You said you miss them

Kwalunga : I lied

(We laughed)

Sky : Get some sleep baby. I need to check on our boys before I sleep

Kwalunga : Ok sweetheart

(My eyes were heavy. I fell asleep as soon
Sky walked out)

(The next day at True Red)

Tina : We missed you bro

Kwalunga : I didn't miss you guys

Anthony : You are lying Lunga

Kwalunga : Ok fine. I did

(We all laughed)

Thomas : How was home?

Kwalunga : It was difficult to fuck my wife in peace

(They laughed)

Anthony : Why?

Kwalunga : The old man was always there

Anthony : Too bad (He laughed)

Kwalunga : Anyway how are things going around here? What did I miss?

Thomas : Zero. The number of cases coming in are low and which is why I think it's better for us to take our trip to Spain while it's still quite

Anthony : Thomas is right

Kwalunga : Ok then let's go for it.

Anthony : I was thinking that this coming Friday would be perfect.

Tina : Guys wait. What about your wedding Lunga?

Kwalunga : No Khanya wants to see her grandparents first.

Thomas : Khanya?

Kwalunga : Sky. Khanya is her Zulu name

Tina : Wow I love it. You know what? I want to marry a Zulu man

Kwalunga : I'll hook you up

(We all laughed)

Thomas : Lunga you do know that you are marrying an Italian woman right?

Kwalunga : I do... And?

Thomas : Since your wedding will be here then you need to follow Italian wedding tradition.

(Tina laughed)

Tina : Tommy come on I'm sure he knows that.

Kwalunga : Actually I don't. Guys I'm not Italian. I am a Zulu man from South Africa not from here

Anthony : And you want Sky to follow your tradition but you don't give a shit about hers

Kwalunga : Oh please Caldo.

Anthony : Italian wedding is nothing that you've never seen before. It's something you know

(I don't like this at all)

Kwalunga : I will have to do everything that is expected to be done by Italian groom. Isn't it?

Anthony : It's nothing bad. I'll show you a video later

Kwalunga : Sky didn't mention any of this Italian tradition to me

Tina : Because she thought you knew. Lunga don't worry it's a normal white wedding but

there will be quite a few things that you aren't familiar with but don't worry about it

Thomas : You will get married on a Sunday.
That is one of our tradition

Kwalunga : Fine. I'll do it then

(They laughed)

Thomas : You are one stubborn
motherfucker

Kwalunga : I just don't fuck with shit bro.

(We all laughed)

Anthony : Everything is settled now. We are going to Spain on Friday and then when we come back hooray! Wedding bells!

(He danced and we laughed)

Thomas : Lunga I hope your fiancée taught you how to speak Spanish

Kwalunga : Por que? (Why)

(They clapped their hands)

Anthony : You are dishing out spanish already. I'm fuckin proud of you man

Kwalunga : I don't have a choice

(We all laughed)

Thomas : You are really good

Sponsored

Lunga. Wow

Tina : Make sure that you hook me up with a smart and gorgeous Zulu man like you

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : You know I got you sis.

Tina : And that's why I love you so much

Kwalunga : I know. (I laughed)

Thomas : I need to call Ademaro

Kwalunga : Is he coming with us?

Thomas : Mhhmm Yeah.

Tina : He is going to be so bored without a partner

Thomas : Ademaro will never be bored. Trust me on that one

Kwalunga : He will find a fuck buddy as soon as he gets there.

Anthony : Definitely

(We all laughed)

WEEK LATER AT SPAIN

(Madrid. Spain's central capital. City of elegant boulevards and expansive manicured parks such as the Buen Retiro. Yes we are finally here. We ate at the oldest restaurant in the world called Sobrino de Botin)

Sky : I miss my boys already

Kwalunga : At least they are safe with your mother sweetheart

Anthony : Exactly so enjoy your time in Spain darling and forget about kids (He laughed)

Sky : I'm actually enjoying this. I mean my handsome man is right here next to me

Mia : What more can a girl ask for?

(We laughed. Mia really looked pregnant and she was glowing)

Ademaro : I need to find myself a girlfriend. Please excuse me

Thomas : Ademaro don't go for people's wives. We want to go back home safe and alive

Ademaro : I'll try big bro.

(We laughed as he walked away)

Agatino : How about we go and hit the club now?

Tina : I'm up for it babe

Anthony : Say no more

Nicola : Count me out. I'm tired

(Nicola was a little bit grumpy and I knew Anthony was behind that)

Anthony : Ok. Who else is with us except my boring girlfriend?

Nicola : Oh so I'm the boring girlfriend now? Really Anth?

Kwalunga : He is just kidding Nicola

(We don't need drama here. Can they stop already?)

Nicola : No Lunga! Anthony is being a asshole right now and I hate it

Thomas : Easy Nicola. It's really not that deep

Nicola : You know what? I'm going back to the hotel. Coming here was a huge mistake

(She walked away)

Mia : Now that was awkward

Anthony : Like I give a shit.

Kwalunga : Caldo that is not on. Go and speak to your girlfriend

Sky : I think we all need to go back to the hotel and get some rest.

Thomas : Sky is right.

Tina : Nope. Me and Agatino are going to Kapital club but you guys can go and sleep

Kwalunga : Sweetheart let's go and sleep

(I helped her up from a chair and we went back to Hotel Santo Domingo)

(The next day we went to see her grandparents in Barcelona. They were very nice and very much in love with each other as old as they were)

(It was time for some Spanish. Love will make you do things you never imagined yourself doing. Never in my life have I thought that I would have to speak all these languages but here I am)

Kwalunga : Estoy feliz de finalmente conocerte señor y Senora Fernandez (I'm happy to finally meet you Mr. and Mrs Fernandez)

Mr Fernandez : Entonces quieres casarte con ella? (So you want to marry her?)

(I looked at Sky and I had a grin on my face)

Kwalunga : Si. la amo (Yes. I love her)

Mrs Fernandez : Veo. Mi hija está feliz por esto Sky? (I see. Is my daughter happy about this Sky?)

(What the heck does that suppose to mean?)

Sky : Si abuela (Yes grandma)

Mrs Fernández : El no es Italiano (He is not Italian)

(This old woman is getting to my nerves)

Sky : Y eso que? (So what?)

Mrs Fernández : Esto incorrecto (It's wrong)

(No. fuck what I said earlier. These people are not nice)

Mr Fernandez : Martina Eso es suficiente!
(Martina. That's enough!!)

Sky : Espera abuelo. Abuela es mi padre español? (Wait grandpa. Grandma is my father spanish?)

(Sky was angry as much as I was)

Mrs Fernández : Eso es diferente (That's different)

Sky : Como? (How)

(I knew exactly what she meant. What she meant was that It's different because I'm black. Fuck this)

Mrs Fernández : No seas estúpido Sky (Don't be stupid Sky)

Sky : No abuela.¿Cómo permitiste que mi mamá se casara Italiano hombre no español hombre? (No grandma. How did you allow my mom to marry an Italian man not Spanish man?)

Mrs Fernández : Tu padre es un buen hombre (Your father is a good man)

Sky : Tu hija es una perra (Your daughter is a bitch)

(This is getting out of hand. Will Sky ever forgive her mother?)

Mr Fernández : Sky Detener!! (Sky Stop!!)

Mrs Fernández : No me gusta este hombre (I don't like this man)

(Like I give a shit about that)

Kwalunga : Sky I need to go. I can't listen to this shit.

Mrs Fernández : ¿Qué está diciendo? (What is he saying?)

Kwalunga : Mxm. Fakof wena!!

(I stood up)

Sky : Baby please wait

Kwalunga : Wait for what exactly? Please allow me to go before I do or say anything that I'll regret

Mr Fernández : Mi hijo por favor siéntate
(My son please sit down)

Mrs Fernández : Lo dejó ir (Let him go)

(I walked out fuming and Sky didn't follow me as I hoped.)

Chapter 75

(Later I was sitting in a bar called Paradiso. I will never be good enough for Sky. What if they convince her to leave me?)

(A guy was coming towards me)

Guy : Dia duro? (Hard day?)

(I chuckled)

Kwalunga : No tienes idea (You have no idea)

Guy : Ven y únete a nosotros (Come join us)

Kwalunga : No Estoy bien aquí (No
Sponsored

Estoy bien aquí (No I'm fine here)

Guy : Vamos hombre (Come on man)

Kwalunga : Ok fine

(I stood up and followed him. We sat down
with 2 other guys)

Guy : Mi nombre es Enero y estos son mis
hermanos Junio y Diciembre. (My name is
January and these are my brothers June and
December)

Kwalunga : I'm Lunga

(Why would they give them such names?. I slowly lifted up my head and I was shocked. These brothers looked exactly the same)

Kwalunga : Woooooh! what the fuc...

(They laughed)

Enero : Somos trillizos (We are triplets)

Kwalunga : Jesus! Esto da miedo (This is scary)

(They laughed and there was something about the way they were laughing and it sounded so familiar to me. I paid more attention to them and no these triplets are mixed race)

Kwalunga : ¿Son ustedes de aquí? (Are you guys from here?)

Junio : si.Por que? (Yes. Why?)

Kwalunga : You don't look like Spaniards

Diciembre : Nuestro padre es negro (Our father is black)

(Now it makes sense. I've also noticed that they understand English but they can't speak it.)

Kwalunga : De donde? (From where)

Junio : No sabemos (We don't know)

Kwalunga : Veo. ¿Cuántos años tenéis chicos ?
(I see. How old are you guys?)

Enero : Veinticinco (Twenty-five)

(We are the same age but I look way older than them)

Kwalunga : I see.

(My phone rang and it was Sky. I switched it off)

Enero : ¿Y de donde eres? (And where are you from?)

Kwalunga : South Africa

(They looked at each other. I couldn't tell them apart but I think it was Diciembre's phone that rang and he answered)

Diciembre : Padre

(Silence)

Diciembre : Padre cálmate. Estamos Llegando
(Dad calm down. We are coming)

(Diciembre was arguing with his father and
he hung up)

Diciembre : Vamos a casa (Let 's go home)

Junio : No Diciembre. Que paso con nuestro
aquerdo? (What about our deal?)

(I was right it was Diciembre. Junio banged
the table with his hand)

Diciembre : Dante puede esperar (Dante can
wait)

Enero : El nos matare (He will kill us)

(Enero quickly looked at me and rubbed his forehead. They were in trouble with that Dante)

Diciembre : Como el infierno lo hará (Like hell he will)

Junio : Le debemos Dante!! (We owe Dante!!)

(He said that in whisper)

Diciembre : Nuestro padre está preocupado
Junio (Our father is worried Junio)

Enero : Adiós Lunga (Bye Lunga)

Diciembre : Ven con nosotros Lunga (Come with us Lunga)

Kwalunga : No puedo (I can't)

Enero : Dame tu numero de telefono (Give me your phone number)

Kwalunga : Sure

(I gave him my phone number and they walked away. I had to go back to Madrid and it was going to take me 6 hours)

(I called a taxi and I was inside the taxi when I saw someone who looked exactly like my father Mthunzi. How did he get here? I was so shocked)

Kwalunga : Stop the car!!

(I said to the driver and he stopped. I rolled down the window)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane

(The man who looked like Baba u Mthunzi was on the phone and he didn't even hear me)

Kwalunga : Mthunzi!!

(Nothing. I got off the taxi)

Kwalunga : Please wait I'm coming now

(I went to this man)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane

(He turned around and hung up the call. He looked exactly like Mthunzi even the small scar on his forehead matched everything)

Man : Puedo ayudarle? (Can I help you?)

(There was no way Baba could speak Spanish)

Kwalunga : Yeah yeah.... I mean No

(This is so confusing)

Man : Estas bien? (Are you ok?)

(He was as confused)

Kwalunga : Te pareces a mi padre (You look like my father)

Man : Oh. Lo siento (Sorry)

(He shook his head and walked away. What the hell is going on here?)

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

To my readers. I'm currently not feeling well but I will try my best to finish this book.

Thank you

Chapter 76

(I went back to Madrid and I kept thinking all the way from Barcelona. I can't stop thinking about that man. Maybe I was just imagining things. Maybe seeing those triplets messed up my mind but why did that man run away? This thing is driving me crazy. Let me just forget about it. I opened our hotel room door and boom! Sky was in Ademaro's arms)

Kwalunga : What the fuck is going on here?

(Sky jumped from Ademaro and ran to me. She was crying but I didn't give a shit about that. What is she doing with Ademaro alone let alone in his arms)

Sky : Baby where have you been?

Kwalunga : Ademaro what the hell are you doing here with my wife?

Ademaro : Lunga it's not what you think?

Sky : Baby he was just.....

Kwalunga : You shut up. Ademaro I'm talking to you. Are you fucking my wife?

Ademaro : Hell no!!. I will never do something like that Lunga. Lunga you are my brother. Remember?

Kwalunga : You are fucking Sky Ademaro and I know it

(Sky was busy touching me)

Sky : Morgan please listen to me. I will never do that to you

Kwalunga : Don't touch me! Your grandparents told you that I'm not good enough for you because I'm black and they told you that they don't like me So Is that why you are fucking Ademaro now? Woza la wena shlama

(I grabbed Ademaro by his jacket and pinned him against the wall. He was literally crying)

Kwalunga : Are you fucking my wife!? (I yelled)

Sky : Morgan leave Ademaro now!! He is just a kid

Kwalunga : Sky leave this room now!!

Ademaro : Lunga please. I didn't do it and I swear

(Yes he didn't do it. I saw it in his eyes and let go of him)

Kwalunga : Then explain to me what the fuck is going on here?

Ademaro : Sky has been crying since she got here. She said she can't find you and she was worried sick. I was trying to comfort her. that's all

Kwalunga : Ademaro listen. You don't get to comfort my wife ever!! Whether I'm dead or alive!. Do you understand me!?

Ademaro : Sure! sure!

(I tap his shoulder)

Kwalunga : Good. Now get out

(He ran out)

Sky : Morgan how dare you? After everything we've been through and you think that I would cheat on you?

(Silence)

Sky : Morgan do you still think that I sleep around with every man? You think that I would have sex wit...

(I silenced her with a deep kiss. I undressed her and she did the same with me. We were now in bed. My lips never left hers. I kissed her all the way down to her pussy. She moved her hips up and down. she moaned. I sucked between her thigh leaving a red mark. That was a reminder of who exactly owns her. I ran my tongue around her swollen clit and I stopped and looked at her)

Sky : Morgan please

Kwalunga : What do you want?

Sky : You baby. I want your dick

(I slid in and pushed my dick deeper)

Kwalunga : Sky I don't care what anyone else says or thinks and I don't care whether your

grandparents like me or not. I own you Sky.
You are mine

Sky : Yes baby! Yes!. I'm yours and yours
only

(I pounded inside her pussy. Her head fell
back and her breasts bounced with each
stroke)

Sky : Oh fuck. You own me Morgan. You own
that pussy

(I sucked her nipples and her body trembled.
I went faster and faster. Our bodies were
sweating and we both needed to catch our
breath)

Kwalunga : Oh shit!

(I pressed my forehead on hers and she held me tighter)

Sky : I love you Lunga and I love you so much baby

Kwalunga : You are mine Sky. Don't forget that shit

Sky : I won't baby

Kwalunga : Good. I'm going to take a shower

Sky : I'm coming with you.

(I pecked her lips)

Kwalunga : Ok Sweetheart

(We finished taking a bath and we fell asleep in each other's arms)

(I was at KwaMaphumulo and my father Mzwandile was leaning on the kraal)

Mzwandile : Do you remember what I said to you Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : You told me a lot of things baba except telling about my real father

Mzwandile : I only found about you and Manqoba after I left. Kwalunga I'm still your father and I'm protecting you more than Manqoba

Kwalunga : Thank you baba

Mzwandile : I'm just worried about your son Akwandiswe. He is angry and when he is angry he becomes just like you. Since he is a Hlela now he is capable of doing things that

you never thought he would. You told him to kill Kwalunga and he took it to heart. You need to fix it. You need to fix him

Kwalunga : Baba Akwandiswe is only 13 years old.

Mzwandile : Wait and see. He is turning out just like you because he is just as angry as you. Anyway that's not the reason I'm here. I'm here to remind you about what I said to you when you were young. Kwalunga I told you that you are the future of this family and I meant it. Find him

Kwalunga : Find who baba?

Mzwandile : You are so close. Find him Kwalunga and take him home

Kwalunga : Baba I don't understand

Mzwandile : Find him.. Find him.. Find him

Sky : Baby wake up!!

Kwalunga : Uh! Uh!

Sky : You are speaking in your sleep. I think you were dreaming

Kwalunga : Dammit! I was. I need some water

Sky : I'll get it for you. Baby are you ok?

Kwalunga : No don't worry sweetheart. I'll get it myself. Please sleep

(I got up and went to the fridge. What was my father talking about in that dream?)

Chapter 77

(The following day we all went to Prado museum Crystal palace and later we explored the heaven on earth Buen Retiro park)

(Sky laying on my chest)

Sky : I don't think they will come for our wedding

Kwalunga : Your grandparents?

Sky : Yeah but we don't need them baby

Kwalunga : Are you sure that you don't need them?

Sky : I have you and our boys. That's all I need.

Kwalunga : And your mother sweetheart

(Silence)

Kwalunga : You need to forgive her Khanya. She is trying really hard to make things up between you two and you need to meet her halfway. Family is everything Sweetheart

Sky : I know baby

Kwalunga : You forgave your father so easily and I don't get why you can't forgive your mother.

Sky : I forgave her baby

Kwalunga : No you haven't but I know you will because you are a wonderful woman

sweetheart and it is time you let go of everything that happened in the past.

Sky : You do know how much I love you. right?

Kwalunga : Yes Sweetheart

Sky : And Thank you Morgan for being in my life. You are a God sent and I promise you that I will make things right between me and my mother

Kwalunga : Thank you Sweetheart and about last night....

Sky : Don't mention it. Baby you need to trust me

Kwalunga : I trust you my love.

Sky : I saw that you left your mark

(She giggled)

Kwalunga : Now you know who owns you.

Sky : I always knew that you own me baby

(She kissed me)

Kwalunga : Tell me about your father's parents

Sky : They died when I was 5 years old.

Kwalunga : I'm sorry about that.

Sky : It's ok baby

(My phone rang. Unregistered number)

Kwalunga : Kwalunga speaking

Lunga it's Enero. ¿Dónde estás? (Where are you?)

(Oh it's one of those triplets)

Kwalunga : Hola Enero. I'm in Madrid. Sup?

Enero : Madrid? Cuando saliste a Barcelona?
(When did you leave Barcelona?)

Kwalunga : Anoche (Last night)

(Sky was staring at me)

Enero : Oh. ¿Cuándo vas a volver? (When are you coming back?)

Kwalunga : I'm not.

Enero : ¿Por qué? (Why?)

Kwalunga : Because I'm..... Never mind Enero.
I'm not coming back man

Enero : Enviame tu ubicación (Send me your
location)

Kwalunga : Por que? (Why?)

Enero : Solo hazlo (Just do it)

(This guy. Really?)

Kwalunga : Estas bien (Fine)

(I hung up and sent him my location)

Sky : Who was that?

Kwalunga : Some guy that I met yesterday in Barcelona

Sky : So there was no girl?

Kwalunga : Come on sweetheart

(She giggled)

Sky : I'm just asking baby

Kwalunga : There was no girl

(Anthony and Nicola came to us holding hands. I guess they are fine now. Good)

Anthony : We are going to eat

Kwalunga : About damn time

(They laughed)

Sky : My man almost died here

Kwalunga : I love my food and my pussy
sweetheart and you know it

Anthony : Everybody knows that. Thomas is
already dead

Kwalunga : Krane loves his food more than I
do so yeah he should be dead by now

(We all laughed)

(We were done eating when I received
another call from Enero telling me that they
had arrived in Madrid. I introduced them to
the guys and we went for drinks)

Anthony : Damn! You boys look like one person

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : When I saw them yesterday I was so freaked out. I'm used to seeing twins but triplets not a chance.

Ademaro : I was going to fuckin scream

(We all laughed)

Thomas : Honey are you sure that you are not carrying 3?

(Mia laughed)

Mia : I'm carrying septuplets for you love.

Thomas : Don't worry honey Lunga will take 3
Anthony will take 2 Ademaro will take 1 and
we will raise 1.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart please ask them why
they are giving me 3?

(Sky laughed)

Tina : That's because you already have 2
back in Italy so you know everything about
raising kids

Agatino : And we have none babe and I want
triplets. Look at these boys this is
fascinating to watch

(He was referring to Enero Junio y
Diciembre. Enero was looking at every woman
walking in. I guess he loves women that much
)

Diciembre : Tienes niños Lunga? (You have kids?)

Kwalunga : si yo tener dos niños. (Yes I have 2 boys)

Sky : Oh God! You guys don't speak English?

(Junio shook his head)

Junio : Pero lo entendemos (But we get it)

Enero : Nuestro padre ama inglés (Our father loves English)

Kwalunga : You should all ask him to teach you.

Diciembre : When he is not tense I ask him to teach me

(That came out really hard but Diciembre is really trying.)

Kwalunga : So your father is tense too? (I laughed)

Junio : Y muy controlador (And very controlling)

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : That sounds like my father

Diciembre : Lunga you don't know Langa. El es peor (He is worse)

(Their father's name is Langa. Interesting)

(Junio's phone rang. It was easy to tell them apart now because each of them had different hair styles)

Junio : Mira Lunga? (You have kids?)

Kwalunga : si yo tener dos niños. (Yes I have 2 boys)

Sky : Oh God! You guys don't speak English?

(Junio shook his head)

Junio : Pero lo entendemos (But we get it)

Enero : Nuestro padre ama inglés (Our father loves English)

Kwalunga : You should all ask him to teach you.

Diciembre : When he is not tense I ask him to teach me

(That came out really hard but Diciembre is really trying.)

Kwalunga : So your father is tense too? (I laughed)

Junio : Y muy controlador (And very controlling)

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : That sounds like my father

Diciembre : Lunga you don't know Langa. El es peor (He is worse)

(Their father's name is Langa. Interesting)

(Junio's phone rang. It was easy to tell them apart now because each of them had different hair styles)

Junio : Mira el ya esta llamando (See He is calling already)

Enero : No respondas Junio (Don't answer)

Junio : Ok

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : And where is your mother?

Diciembre : Ella murió cuando teníamos 16
(She died when we were 16)

Anthony : Damn! Sorry boys

Thomas : Imagine having to raise 3 boys
without your wife

(So they also lost their mother at 16 just like
I did)

Tina : Very sad indeed

(It was one drink after another and before I
knew it everyone else was drunk except Mia
Thomas and I.)

Thomas : These people are drunk. We need
to get going

(Sky was kissing me non stop)

Kwalunga : I'm worried about these triplets.
They can't drive back to Barcelona They are
drunk.

Sky : Baby I want to sleep. Let's go baby

Kwalunga : We are going now Sweetheart.
Just hold on. Ok?

(I kissed her forehead and she went back to
my shoulder and slept)

Thomas : They are way too drunk

(One of their phones rang. I answered)

Kwalunga : Helo

Diciembre where the fuck are you guys?

(I think it's their father)

Kwalunga : Mr Langa. Your boys are here with
me in Madrid

Langa : Madrid? ¿Quién eres tú? (Who are you?)

Kwalunga : Kwalunga Hlela. Their friend we met yesterday at Barcelona and they came to visit me here in Madrid today

(Silence)

Langa : You are Kwalunga who?

Kwalunga : Hlela. Mr Langa listen I'll call a ride for your boys and it will bring them to Barcelona because they are drunk. I will keep their car and they can pick it up tomorrow at Hotel Santo Domingo

Langa : No no no. I'll come and pick them up

Kwalunga : Sir it's 10h00pm

Langa : I'm in Boadilla del Monte. I'll be there now

Kwalunga : We at Malasana. Sharp

(I hung up)

Thomas : And?

Kwalunga : He is coming to get them.

(Sky was now dancing with everyone else. Again only Thomas Mia and I were sitting down)

Kwalunga : Enero!! Enero!

Thomas : Music is too loud. He won't hear you

Sky : Baby come and dance with me

Kwalunga : I'm coming now sweetheart

Sky : You promise?

(I chuckled)

Kwalunga : Yeah Khanya

(Langa called and said he was outside.)

Kwalunga : Diciembre. Your father is outside

(He laughed)

Diciembre : Enero! Junio!. Langa es fuera de

(Langa is outside)

Junio : Que? Como? (What? How?)

Enero : Hoy estamos muertos (We dead today)

Junio : ¡Definitivamente! (Definitely!)

Kwalunga : Ok let's go. Thomas let me walk them out

Thomas : Of course

(We walked out and a man was waiting outside. His back facing us)

Diciembre : Padre sorry. Ok?

(The man turned around. Boom! It was the man who looked like Mthunzi that I saw yesterday)

Langa : Enero! Junio! Diciembre! Is this how I raised you boys? To go out Drink alcohol and never come back home? Is this how men behave?

(Right now I feel like I'm listening to my father Mzwandile)

Junio : Lo siento padre (Sorry father)

(Junio laughed and Langa got really angry)

Langa : Junio. Estas drogado? (Are you high?)

Kwalunga : No sir he is not

(He looked at me and he froze)

Kwalunga : I'm Kwalunga Hlela. From South Africa

Langa : Langa... just Langa

Kwalunga : I see. Here are the car keys

(He was just staring at me)

Kwalunga : Keys!

(He cleared his throat)

Langa : Yes Keys.... I mean No. No keys.
please keep them. Enero will come to pick up
his car tomorrow

Kwalunga : Ok. I'll be at Hotel Santo
Domingo

Langa : Yesterday. I saw you yesterday

Kwalunga : Yeah and I'm sorry about what
happened. I thought you were my father

Langa : And you look like my....Olvidalo
(Forget it) Get in the car Enero and Junio!

(I went back inside. Luckily Enero's car was big enough so we used it to get back to the hotel. When we got to the hotel I realized that I forgot my phone in Enero's car so I went back to the parking lot)

(Something caught my attention on Enero's driving license. I closed my eyes and opened them again before I read it once again.)

Kwalunga : Enero Hlela (I read out loud this time)

(I took a picture of his driving license. Locked his car and went back to my room. Sky was fast asleep)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart wake up

Sky : Mhmm! Mhmmm!

Kwalunga : Sweetheart please read here

(She squinted her eyes)

Sky : Enero Hlela

(She read that and went back to sleep. I was actually losing my mind. This can't be a coincidence not after I met his father who looked exactly like Mthunzi. But how? This doesn't make any sense. I took my laptop and started doing some research but there was nothing useful. I struggled to sleep because I had a lot on my mind)

Chapter 78

(I woke up at dawn the following day and went straight to Barcelona with Enero's car. I called Enero as soon as I got there and he arrived)

Kwalunga : Enero I need some answers.

Enero : Acerca de? (About)

Kwalunga : I saw something and I need to speak to your father about it.

Enero : Oh OK. No hay problema (No problem)

Kwalunga : Why didn't you tell me that you are Enero Hlela?

Enero : Por que iba a contarte todo sobre mi?
(Why would I tell you everything about me?)

Kwalunga : Never mind Enero. Please take me to your father

Enero : Está todo bien? (Is everything alright?)

Kwalunga : Jah.

(We arrived at his home and I was so nervous. For a moment I wanted to go back to Madrid and forget this whole thing)

Enero : Ven (Come)

(I got out of the car and took a deep breath. A dog came running to Enero)

Enero : Eh! Jojo! Ven

(His dog is Jojo too. Is this another coincidence?. Junio was washing his car outside)

Junio : Lunga?

Kwalunga : Hey Junio

Junio : Guau! Me alegro que estes aqui (Wow! I'm glad you're here)

Kwalunga : Yeah

(Lunga came out of the house and he was shocked to see me)

Lunga : Lunga

Kwalunga : Lunga

Lunga : What are you doing here?

Kwalunga : I'm here to see you

Langa : Veo. Please come in

Kwalunga : Gracias (Thank you)

(That was easier than I thought. We walked in and his house was stunning. I noticed a big picture of a man on the wall. It's funny because that man looked like me. Old version of me I'd say. Langa noticed that I was paying so much attention on that picture)

Kwalunga : Who is that?

Langa : My father

(I looked at the picture next to it and it was a picture of a woman. A beautiful woman)

Kwalunga : Oh and that?

Langa : My wife

Kwalunga : Oh ok. Beautiful (I muttered)

(He laughed)

Langa : Please take a seat

Kwalunga : Thank you

(I sat down)

Langa : Would you like something to drink?

Kwalunga : No thanks. Langa you know why I'm here. I'm not going to drag this conversation and beat around the bush. You are just as confused as I am. I saw it in your eyes the first time you saw me

(He sighed and sat down)

Langa : Where do I start?

Kwalunga : About who you are. Let's start by being honest with each other

(Silence)

Kwalunga : You know what? This is not a coincidence Langa. Me bumping to your boys who laughed exactly like my father and later I see you A man who looked exactly like my father and it turned out that Enero's surname is Hlela. Please explain to me what's really going on here. Who are you Langa?

Langa : Who are you

Sponsored

A man who looked exactly like my father and it turned out that Enero's surname is Hlela. Please explain to me what's really going on here. Who are you Langa?

Langa : Who are you Kwalunga?

Kwalunga : I told you that I'm Kwalunga Hlela. I'm from South Africa kwaZulu - Natal. I'm the son of Mzw.. Mangoba Hlela

(He was just staring at me and he rubbed his eyes and stood up. He started pacing the room)

Langa : Should I call my boys?

Kwalunga : No. Not now

(He sighed)

Langa : Langalamahlela. My name is Langalamahlela Hlela. I was born in South Africa. I don't remember where exactly

(I swallowed hard and my heart started racing. My hands were sweating and I wanted to remove my gloves but I couldn't)

Langa : That man (He pointed at the picture) is Aaron Hlela. My father

(So that is Aaron that maNgema told me about. I looked at his picture once again)

Kwalunga : Please proceed

Langa : My mother left soon after I was born because my father wanted to marry another wife and my mother was against that so she left and went back home.

(Something doesn't make sense to me. Mthunzi said my grandmother went back home after she gave birth to her and she never went back to the city so how is Langa one of her sons?)

Kwalunga : I don't understand. Your mother left soon after you were born and she never came back to you and your father?

Langa : Yes. My mother didn't go alone. She took my twin brother and left.

(I took off my jacket. My whole body was sweating. This is Baba omncane u Mthunzi's twin)

Kwalunga : You have a twin?

Langa : Yes. That's what my father told me. He said when my mother left she was sick

and she wasn't going to be able to take care of two newborn babies so she took one and my father was left with one. I was left with my father.... (He sighed) After my father died I tried so much to look for my mother and my twin. I went back to South Africa but I couldn't find them. I looked everywhere Kwalunga. I searched every country on earth but I couldn't find them.

(He rubbed his eyes and tightened his jaws)

Kwalunga : So Aaron is no more?

Langa : He died when I was 16 years old and life wasn't easy after that. I tried so much to get my father to tell me more about my mother but every time I spoke about her... He...He got so angry and he told me that I'm messing up his marriage by asking about my mother. He called me an ungrateful bastard

(He rubbed the back of his neck and looked up) so I had to stop asking questions.

(There is something about the age of 16)

Langa : 2 years before my father died we moved to Zimbabwe and my father started getting really sick and he died. After my father died my step mother started treating me really badly. Things were difficult for me Kwalunga .I had to drop out of school and look for a job and it was difficult finding a job in Zimbabwe. I found a job as a security in some company and one day a beautiful woman came to that company (He smiled) and later when she left she said to me "If you come with me to Spain I can give you a better job" and that how I met my wife (He pointed at the picture) Mother of my kids. A woman who changed my life.

(Silence)

Langa : You look like my father. How is that possible?

Kwalunga : Because your father is my grandfather and your twin is Mthunziwamahlela. He is my father's youngest brother

(He quickly looked at me and sat down next to me)

Langa : You know my twin?

Kwalunga : I do. Unfortunately your mother is no more but your twin is very much alive

(He smiled and ran outside)

Langa : Enero! Junio! Diciembre! Please come and meet your brother. Come boys! Come!

(I smiled and shook my head. Life is full of surprises)

(We sat down and ate. They were so happy and everything felt like a dream. I couldn't stop thinking about Baba omncane u Mthunzi. I wonder what he will say or do if he finds out that there are actually 2 of them.)

Enero : Cuando te vi por primera vez sentí esa conexión (When I first saw you I felt this connection)

Diciembre : Same here

Junio : No podía dejar de pensar en lo mucho que te parecías a nuestro abuelo (I couldn't stop thinking about how much you looked like our grandfather)

Kwalunga : I had to come here before I flew back to Italy and I'm glad I did. Hopefully I will see you guys soon. Padre. I'd love you to meet your twin brother

Langa : Definitely Son and we are coming for your wedding

Yes we are (The triplets said in unison)

(We all laughed)

Langa : Kwalunga Thank you so much. I thank God that you and your colleagues decided to come to Spain otherwise I wouldn't have known about you and about my family

especially my twi . Thank you for finding me.
For finding us. This is your home and I want
you to make sure that you visit us at least
once a month and We will do the same

Kwalunga : I will baba. Thank you for
everything

Diciembre : When are you going back to
Italy?

Kwalunga : Tomorrow

Langa : Please spend the night with us.
Please

Please brother (The triplets said in unison.
Why are they speaking at once? It's weird)

Kwalunga : My wife will kill me (I laughed)

Langa : Give me her number and I will talk to her

Kwalunga : I don't know baba this was supp....

Langa : I'm begging you son. Please

Kwalunga : Ok. Ok fine. Let me call her

(I went outside and called Sky)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart

Sky : Baby where are you?

Kwalunga : Barcelona

Sky : What? I mean what are you doing there?

Kwalunga : Do you remember anything that happened last night? About Enero Hlela?

Sky : Mhhmm You know now that you have reminded me. I do remember. I remember his driving license

(I explained everything to Sky and she was more happy than I thought. She wanted to come but it was already late and I couldn't allow my wife to be driven by a stranger all the way here. I spent the night in Barcelona with my father and my brothers. Damn! It was like a dream)

Chapter 79

(We safely traveled back to Italy. I decided to not break the news to Mthunzi and wait

for him to come here for my wedding. Sky was busy with our wedding planner and her mom. I hardly spent time with my wife but I was happy to see her working together with her mother planning our wedding. I can't believe I'm getting married in the next two days. My father and Sthembele are coming today and Sky will be staying with her mother because "it's part of tradition")

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I don't understand why you have to go.

Sky : I have to go baby. You are not allowed to see me tomorrow

Kwalunga : But you are my wife

Sky : No baby. You can't see me. I'm not even allowed to see a reflection of myself. It's bad luck

Kwalunga : Are you serious?

Sky : Yes baby. I can only get a glimpse of myself on our wedding day but after I remove my shoe or a gl...Regalo what's that noise? Did you hear that baby?

(Actually I did and I was trying to ignore it)

Regalo : Nothing Mah

Sky : Regalo Akwandiswe Hlela. Give me your phone

Kwalunga : We are having breakfast and I don't understand why you have your phone with you. Give your phone to your mom

Regalo : I'm sorry baba

(He handed his phone over to his mother)

Sky : Explain to us why you are watching videos of naked girls in a pool Regalo?

Kwalunga : Why?

Regalo : Mah it's just a music video and you make it sound like I'm watching porn or something.

(I clenched my teeth)

Kwalunga : Regalo how dare you speak to your mother like that?

Regalo : I'm sorry baba but someone sent me that video on Facebook and I wasn't even aware that it's something like that

Kwalunga : Why do you have Facebook?

Regalo : Baba come on

(I swear this boy has been acting really strange since we came back from KwaMaphumulo and I hate this new behavior of his)

Kwalunga : Regalo tell me something. Who the hell do you think you are?

Sky : Baby please calm down. I'm sure he didn't mean any of that

Kwalunga : Sweetheart we can't let this boy control us. We are his parents and it seems like I have to remind him that

(I stood up and pushed back my chair)

Regalo : Baba I'll never do anything to disrespect you and Mah. I'm sorry if you f.....

Kwalunga : You are going to Bolsena with your mother and your brother

Regalo : Ah! Dad again? You promised me that I'll stay with you here

Kwalunga : I'm allowed to change my mind since you have a stinking attitude

Regalo : We stayed in Bolsena for a whole week while you were in Spain and now I have to go back there

Sky : Come on sweetie it will be fun

Regalo : No Mah. I just want to be with my father

(He ran upstairs)

Sky : My boy please wait

Kwalunga : You are spoiling this boy Khanya.

Sky : No Morgan he just wants your attention

Kwalunga : Is that why he is behaving like a dick?

Sky : Baby please go and speak to him

Kwalunga : I'll speak to him. I'm going to miss you sweetheart

(I kissed Sky and Leggero laughed)

Sky : Our boys are bad baby (She giggled)

Kwalunga : Yeah. I want them to move out now.

(Sky laughed)

Sky : Baby Regalo is young and Leggero is just a baby. How are they going to move out?

Kwalunga : I don't care. They are making my life difficult

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : I want to be bury my d... (I paused and looked at Leggero)

(Sky giggled)

Sky : I know exactly what you want and after last night? Forget it baby. God! I can hardly walk and you want to fuck me again?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I'll be gentle. Come on my love

(She stood up and took the dishes)

Sky : No baby

Kwalunga : Ok fine. I'm going to the airport and I'm taking your car

Sky : Ok. Baby I need some meds for flu

Kwalunga : Are you sick?

(I touched her forehead and she laughed)

Sky : No baby not for me but for Leggero

Kwalunga : He is not sick

Sky : I know but you know how cold it is in Bolsena.

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I hate pharmacies

Sky : Fine. I'll buy it myself

Kwalunga : I know you're not angry and Thank you sweetheart (I kissed her and she giggled). Regalo Let's go!!

(I took Sky's car keys)

Kwalunga : Regalo if you don't come down now
I will I...

(He ran down the stairs)

Kwalunga : Good. Sweetheart I'll see you
now

Sky : Bye my favorite people

(We got inside the car and I drove off)

Regalo : Baba I don't want to go to Bolsena

Kwalunga : Why? You want to control me
here?

Regalo : Of course not baba. I just miss
hanging out with you

Kwalunga : Fine but you do know that Bolsena is just 3 hours from here?

Regalo : Yes

Kwalunga : Regalo I promise that if you dare start with your nuisance I will send you to your grandfather's house and your grandmother will feed you meatballs until you cry.

(We laughed. This is my boy and I love him so much)

(We found Sthembele
Sponsored

maMyeni and Mthunzi already waiting for us at the airport. I helped them with their bags and I drove back)

Sthembele : Hello Regalo my boy

Regalo : Hello Aunty. Hello Mkhulu. Hello gogo

Kwalunga : Jeez! Regalo

(We laughed. This boy sometimes acts like a 5 years old kid)

Mthunzi : I missed you mfan'wam

Regalo : I missed you too mkhulu

Mthunzi : Besithi awusezi ukuzosilanda

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Hau baba I was only 10 minutes late

maMyeni : Your father is not a patient man. Italy is so beautiful

Sthembele : Too much. Bafo I'm moving here with you and you will buy me a house

Kwalunga : After you graduated

(She laughed. My phone vibrated with a message)

"Will be there in 6 hours. J Hlela"

Kwalunga : Oh Junio (I muttered)

Mthunzi : Is everything alright?

(I smiled)

Kwalunga : Actually everything is just perfect baba omncane. For once everything is just so perfect

Sthembele : Someone is so happy about getting married

Kwalunga : Yeah sure I am (I laughed)

Mthunzi : Akakhokhanga nelobola

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane come on. Jeeesus!

(We all laughed. As soon as we got to my house I sent a text to Anthony and asked him to pick up Langa and his boys from the airport. I asked to him to keep them at his house for a few hours)

(Sky prepared food for us. Sky's mother arrived to pick up Sky and Leggero)

Sky : Baby are you sure that you are going to be fine?

Kwalunga : Of course I'm not going to be fine without my wife.

Sky : Babbby!

Kwalunga : I'm just kidding. I'll be fine sweetheart. Regalo and I are going to be fine

(I kissed her and I kissed Leggero's forehead)

Kwalunga : I'm going to miss you my boy.

Sky : Regalo come to mommy boy boy. I'm going now

(Sky wanted to cry and I hugged her)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart it's just for 2 nights. Ok?

Sky : I'm going to miss you and our son.
Morgan I can't spend any day without you anymore. I love you so much

Kwalunga : I love you more sweetheart

(Regalo was busy kissing Leggero all over his face and saying thousand goodbye)

Sky : Come to mommy Regalo

(She hugged him)

Sky : I'll miss you boy boy and please don't give your Father a hard time. Behave yourself.

Regalo : I promise Mah

Sky : Perfect. I'll see you on Sunday. Ok?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart we are going to be fine

Sky : I know baby I just.....

Kwalunga : I love you Khanya

Sky : I love you Lunga.

(Sky and Leggero were gone to Bolsena. I had to speak to Baba omncane)

Sthembele : This house is way too gorgey
Lunga. I love it

maMyeni : I've never seen anything like this
before

Kwalunga : Thank you. There is something
important that I need to tell you guys

Sthembele : Oh?

maMyeni : Uyangithusa ke manje

Kwalunga : No Mah relax. Where is baba?

Regalo : He went to the bathroom

Kwalunga : Ok. Regalo please go to your room.
I need to speak to the elders

Regalo : Ok Dad

(Mthunzi came back from the bathroom)

Mthunzi : Yey muhle lomuzi wakho Kwalunga

Kwalunga : Thank you. Baba we need to talk

Mthunzi : Oh. Ok

(He sat down with us)

Kwalunga : 2... 3 weeks ago I went to Spain with Khanya and my colleagues. We actually went there to see Sky grandparents but they didn't like me and they said they won't be part of our wedding. I was fine with that and we were ready to leave Spain and come back here when I met Langalamahlela and his kids

Mthunzi : Who is that and how is that any of our business?

(I explained everything that happened and none of them believed me. Sthembele laughed at me like I was a fool)

Kwalunga : It's ok they are on their way and you will all meet them.

Mthunzi : Kwalunga there is no such thing. You were dreaming or something but lento oyishoyo ayikho.

maMyeni : Yoh! Kwalunga you and your fairy tales. Ay mina ngicela ukuyogeza ngilale

(My phone rang. It was Anthony)

Kwalunga : Caldo

Anthony : Man. We are outside

Kwalunga : Sharp

(I hung up and looked at Baba omncane)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane. Your twin is here
and Sthe? Your brothers are here

(I stand up and walk outside leaving everyone
staring at me.)

(I walked back in first and when I looked at
Mthunzi he was sweating.)

Kwalunga : Please come in

(Mthunzi stood up quickly. Imagine finding
out 48 years later that you are a twin. Langa
and his boys walked in and maMyeni pointed
at Langa then Mthunzi after that she
fainted)

(Mthunzi paid no attention to his fainted wife. He walked closer to his twin. They stared at each other and they hugged. It was emotional to watch.)

(1 hour later maMyeni woke up and we sat down as family. From that moment Langa couldn't leave Mthunzi's sight. When we were sitting down Langa sat down next to Mthunzi. He was always next to Mthunzi. I felt sorry for Mah. She has lost her husband here)

(As hard as it was for triplets to speak English but they tried)

Diciembre : We finally have a sister in the family

Junio : It feels like a dream. All this feels like a dream

(I knew what Junio was talking about. I was just sitting in that table looking around and I couldn't believe all that was happening)

Enero : I just can't wait to go home in South Africa

Langa : Once I get home I don't think I will ever go back to Spain

(We laughed)

Kwalunga : Let me go and put my son to bed.

(Regalo was fast asleep in maMyeni's thighs)

Diciembre : Tomorrow I'm taking him out. I want to hook him up with a girlfriend

Kwalunga : I will kill you Diciembre

Diciembre : He is my son too and I can do whatever I want with him

(We all laughed and I took Regalo to bed)

Kwalunga : Goodnight my boy

Regalo : Where are you going to sleep baba?

Kwalunga : At uncle Anthony's house. You want to come with me?

(He laughed)

Regalo : No. Aunt Theh will sleep here with me

Kwalunga : Oh you don't want me anymore? (I laughed)

Regalo : Ah! I do dad. (He giggled)

Kwalunga : I love you son

Regalo : I love you too baba

Kwalunga : Sleep now. Your aunt will be here soon

Regalo : Goodnight baba

(I went back to downstairs)

Kwalunga : Everybody knows where they will sleep except me so I'm going to Anthony's house

(They laughed)

Diciembre : We told Anthony that we are coming back with you.

Kwalunga : I knew it. Are we even going to sleep tonight?

Enero : No ways

Junio : Nos vamos a quedar toda la noche
(We are going to stay all night)

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane nino Mah. I'm giving you our room but don't do anything that my wife and I wouldn't do

Mthunzi : It will depend

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : Sthe your son is waiting for you.
Padre your room is all sorted

Langa : Thank you Son

Diciembre : Dad you need a girlfriend seriously

Langa : Diciembre don't start with me

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : Guys let's go

Junio : Lunga you are driving

Kwalunga : No. Enero is driving

(I threw him the car keys)

Enero : Do I have a choice?

Diciembre : No bro

(We all laughed)

Mthunzi : Boys please be safe and drive safely

Diciembre : Will do dad

Sthembele : And please come back early tomorrow

Langa : Your sister is right.

Enero : Ok. Bye fam

Chapter 80

(We drove to Anthony's house and we found girls and alcohol all over)

Kwalunga : Caldo what is all this now?

Anthony : Think of it as your... What they call it?

Diciembre : Bachelor party

Anthony : Yes that. Thank you Enero.

(Anthony was drunk already)

Diciembre : No I'm Diciembre (He laughed)

Anthony : I'm too drunk to remember who is who. You guys look like one person

Kwalunga : Caldo I don't need all this

(Enero and Junio were busy drinking with the girls as soon as we got here)

Diciembre : Lunga your wife is not here. Live a little

Anthony : By Sunday you are going to be someone's husband and you know what that means?

Diciembre : No more fucking your ex. No more clubbing

Anthony : Thank you Enero

Diciembre : Diciembre. It's Diciembre Anthony not Enero.

Anthony : That's what I said

Kwalunga : You know my dick always gets me in trouble Caldo. You know that

Anthony : I'll take care of that. Ladies may I have your attention please

(Silence)

Anthony : Thank you. Listen tonight we are going to drink and fuck as much as we want but.. But tomorrow we are going our separate ways. We don't know you and you don't know us. None of you is going to keep coming for Lunga's dick. Understand?

(Caldo!! Did he have to spell that out?)

Girl 1: I want that Lunga right now!

Diciembre : Let's get this party started!!

(It seems like everyone else knew about this "party" except me.)

(Hours later things got really lit. There were 2 girls who were all over me and I hated it. Anthony's house was like a fucking zone. I never saw anything like that. They were just fucking and exchanging girls. Condom wraps were all over the place. It was too much)

Kwalunga : Ladies please excuse me. I can't do this

(I can't do this to Sky. It's just not worth it)

Girl : Come on lover boy. Give us a piece of that dick

Kwalunga : No sweetheart. Sorry. Diciembre I have 2 more here. You know what to do

(I ran upstairs and locked myself in the bathroom. My dick was hard as hell. I rubbed

my face. I didn't know what to do but damn I loved Sky and I felt like this was some test to prove my loyalty to her. I took a cold shower and went to "what used to be my room". I was really drunk so I fell asleep as soon as I closed my eyes)

(I woke up the next day and I went downstairs. I laughed when I found them sleeping on the floor naked. Enero was holding a bottle of champagne and the girls were gone. I couldn't find my phone)

Kwalunga : Wake up you Assholes!!!

(They didn't move. I laughed and took a bottle of water and splashed them with water . They woke up quickly)

Diciembre : Jeeezus!! Lunga what the fuck bro?

Anthony : I'm going to kill your brother guys I swear.

(I bursted into laughter)

Kwalunga : I want my phone

Enero : Check it inside the bread box

Kwalunga : Why would you put my phone inside the bread box? (I laughed)

Enero : I didn't trust those bitches

Kwalunga : You trusted those bitches enough to fuck them

Junio : Mi polla me está matando (My dick is killing me)

Kwalunga : You fucked a wrong bitch Junio

(We all laughed)

Junio : Vete a la mierda bro (Fuck you bro)

Diciembre : He pierced his dick couple of weeks ago and he wasn't supposed to be fucking anyone until it healed

Junio : I thought I was fine Diciembre

Kwalunga : Wait. His dick is what?

Enero : Pierced. I told him not to do that stupid shit but he went ahead

Anthony : Let me see

(I saw something like a metal hoop on it and I wanted to throw up. Why would I do that to my dick?)

Kwalunga : Junio You are crazy bro.

Anthony : I'll never do that to my dick. Jeez!
I'll get you painkillers

Kwalunga : Please Caldo get him some.

Anthony : On it

Kwalunga : You guys will clean up all this mess

(They laughed)

Diciembre : What happened to you last night

Kwalunga : I went to bed....Damn!

(I was looking at my phone and I had 27 missed calls from Sky)

Junio : ¿Qué pasa? (What's wrong)

Kwalunga : Mi esposa intentó llamarme anoche
(My wife tried to call me last night)

Junio : Estás en problemas hermano (You're in trouble brother)

Enero : Call her back

Kwalunga : Yeah. I'll call her. I'm so hungry right now

Diciembre : Me too bro. I'm starving

(Anthony came back with painkillers and gave it to Junio)

Anthony : What are we going to eat?

Junio : Guys it's 05h00am

So? (We asked in unison)

Kwalunga : Let me call Sky. Please excuse me

(I went outside and called Sky)

Sky : Kwalunga Hlela please explain to me why you were not picking up my calls?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart. I was drunk

Sky : I'm sure you were and those pictures that Anthony posted. Naked girls? Really Morgan?

(What the fuck is wrong with Anthony?)

Kwalunga : Did you see me in those pictures?

Sky : It doesn't matter Morgan. You were with them. right? And who knows maybe you were busy fucking some bitch to give a shit about taking pictures!! (She yelled)

Kwalunga : You need to calm down

Sky : No!!!

Kwalunga : Do not scream at me Khanya. I told you that I hate that

Sky : Why are you doing this to me? Lunga we are getting married tomorrow and you decide to do this?

Kwalunga : What exactly?

Sky : Hang out with those stupid girls and do whatever you were doing with them

Kwalunga : Last night I came to Anthony's house I got drunk and I went to bed. I didn't touch any girl.

Sky : Stop lying Morgan!!!!

Kwalunga : Stop screaming woman. What's wrong with you? Sky are you sure that you want to marry me?

Sky : How can you ask me something like that?

Kwalunga : You don't trust me Sky and I hate that.

Sky : You give me every reason not to trust you. Do you fuckin blame me!!!

Kwalunga : Sky I'm not Regalo and definitely not Leggero so do not scream at me. You know what? I'm going to end this call and let you calm down as soon as you are ready to speak to me. Call me

(I hung up and went back to the house. They were already cleaning)

Diciembre : Is she angry?

Kwalunga : She will come around.

Enero : Let me speak to her

Kwalunga : Don't worry about it bro. I'm not guilty of anything and I won't allow Sky to treat me like shit.

(Silence)

Anthony : We are going out for breakfast

Kwalunga : Good. I can't eat here. This place stinks

(We all laughed. My phone rang and I went upstairs. It was Sky)

Sky : Baby I'm sorry

Kwalunga : Sweetheart you need to trust me. I meant it when I said I would never do that to you ever again.

Sky : Morgan I love you and it's driving me crazy

Kwalunga : Sky I'm not going anywhere

Sky : My father called last night

Kwalunga : Did you tell him?

Sky : No. I don't want him to fuck up our wedding. We will go to Rebibbia Prison after we got married and he will understand

Kwalunga : Yeah. You right

Sky : I miss you baby

Kwalunga : I miss you too sweetheart and I can't wait to make you my wife. Officially

(She giggled)

Sky : I can't wait to be officially and legally Mrs Kwalunga Hlela

Kwalunga : We are really doing this sweetheart.

Sky : Yes baby

Kwalunga : I love you Sky

Sky : I love you more baby

(I hung up)

(We went for breakfast and later we went back home. We planned to come back later and they promised me that they were not going to bring any girls that night)

Mthunzi : Kwalunga can we talk to you?

Kwalunga : Yes Baba

(We went to my room)

Langa : Son. We are very proud of you. You are a man and we hope that your brothers will learn a thing or two from you

(I laughed)

Mthunzi : Uqinisile ubafo Kwalunga. From tomorrow you will be addressed as someone's husband and you need to act like it. You need to respect maDas

Kwalunga : Yebo baba

Langa : You hold a key to this marriage. It's up to you to make it work and remember to keep your wife happy. If she is happy this marriage will be a success son.

Mthunzi : Kwalunga from tomorrow you will stop running away from your problems. You will sit down with your wife and work things out. Problems will be there and the two of you will fight but the important thing is how you resolve your problems.

Langa : Exactly. If the heat gets too much for you don't come and hide in Spain Don't go and bother my brother in South Africa. You will stay here and work around your problems with your wife and please remember that no matter how angry you get Do not lay your hand on your wife. Do you understand me?

Kwalunga : Loud and clear

Mthunzi : Good. After your wedding my brother and the boys will be going to South Africa with us. We need to do everything

that needs to be done before your traditional wedding. I don't know if you will be coming with us

Kwalunga : I will come 3 days before my wedding and Sky will follow me on the day before.

Langa : Good. My brother I think that will be all.

Mthunzi : Yes bafo.

Kwalunga : We are going to sleep at my friend's house but we will be here first thing tomorrow morning.

Mthunzi : Kayise has cooked. You boys need to eat then you can go because I know when you get to your friend's house food will be the last thing on your mind.

(We laughed)

Langa : That's true my brother. These kids just drink and forget about eating. Which is dangerous for your health

Kwalunga : Ok fine. We will eat before we go

Langa : Good. You may be excused

Kwalunga : Before I do. I just want to say thank you boMadlula. I never thought I'd see this day. I was just living my life with no direction Doing whatever I want whenever I want because nobody told me what's right or what's wrong. I appreciate both of you. I appreciate Mah u maMyeni She has been a great mother to me. Ngiyabonga

Mthunzi : It's ok Madlula

Langa : We love you. You are the best thing that ever happened to this family

Mthunzi : Yazi u Mzwandile used to say Mthunzi u Kwalunga is the future of this family and I didn't understand what he meant by that but now I understand with no hesitation. Kwalunga this is the future that Mzwandile was telling me about. What we have right here right now is the future that Mzwandile was telling me about.

Kwalunga : Madlula.

(I walked away)

Chapter 81

(We went back to Anthony's house later. Thomas Agatino and Ademaro were there.)

Thomas : Is that a watch?

(I looked at my hand)

Kwalunga : Yeeeah

Thomas : Take it off

(I was so confused)

Kwalunga : Why?

Thomas : No jewelry. It will bring bad luck

(This is crazy. I removed my watch anyway)

Anthony : Tomorrow you will be walking
around with this inside your pocket

(It's a small piece of iron)

Kwalunga : Why?

Anthony : You will put this inside your pocket and Sky will rip a small portion of her veil to invite good luck to your marriage.

Kwalunga : Oh ok

(The triplets are up and down. I swear those boys were on some mission. There was something that wasn't sitting well with me about them.)

Ademaro : Are you ok bro?

Kwalunga : Yeah yeah... Sure

Thomas : So tomorrow you are becoming a husband? I can't believe how time flies. I was just telling Mia about how we met.

Kwalunga : I hope you told her that I used to be a cleaner and tea boy at TRI (I laughed)

Thomas : We've been nominated for Investigators of the year and I'm so confident that we will bring it home

Kwalunga : We've been what?

Anthony : We wanted to tell but you were always busy. A lot was happening in your life

Kwalunga : That is great news. When are the awards?

Thomas : Tomorrow night. These awards are big Lunga They host them after every 5 years and it's the first time True Red Investigators gets nominated. Your hard work and dedication has placed TRI on the

map and we are forever grateful. Thank you Lunga.

Kwalunga : Come on Krane. We are a team.

Anthony : Thomas is right Lunga. You have no idea what TRI used to be like before you joined us. We used to sit all day doing nothing because we had no cases coming in. Then one day we had to investigate the case that led us all the way to South Africa. We didn't go out of the country for these investigations but at that time we had no choice. We had to follow every lead and make sure that investigation was a success or it was going to be over for TRI. Thomas was ready to shut it down

(Anthony laughed)

Thomas : He is right. We were going to shut it down and join other agencies. You saved TRI but you just don't know that.

Kwalunga : TRI saved me and you guys know it.

Anthony : A toast to TRI

To TRI (We said in unison)

Thomas : And I want to propose a toast to Lunga.

(I chuckled)

To Lunga (They said in unison)

Kwalunga : Gentlemen please excuse me

(I went to my brothers)

Kwalunga : Enero is everything ok here?

Enero : Yeah bro. It nothing we can't handle

Kwalunga : Is Dante still giving you guys problems?

(He swallowed hard)

Enero : How do you know about Dante?

Kwalunga : You guys mentioned his name the first time we met.

Enero : Oh yeah. Dante is... was.. Don't worry about it bro.

Kwalunga : You killed him?

(He froze. I don't know why I said that but when he said "Is was" I just knew it)

Enero : Are you stalking us?

Kwalunga : I'm not but even if I was I don't see how is that a problem. Enero I'm your brother and whatever shit you guys are doing will definitely come back to us.

(Silence)

Kwalunga : Call Junio and Diciembre. I'll be upstairs

Anthony : Lunga

Sponsored

They host them after every 5 years and it's the first time True Red Investigators gets nominated. Your hard work and dedication

has placed TRI on the map and we are forever grateful. Thank you Lunga.

Kwalunga : Come on Krane. We are a team.

Anthony : Thomas is right Lunga. You have no idea what TRI used to be like before you joined us. We used to sit all day doing nothing because we had no cases coming in. Then one day we had to investigate the case that led us all the way to South Africa. We didn't go out of the country for these investigations but at that time we had no choice. We had to follow every lead and make sure that investigation was a success or it was going to be over for TRI. Thomas was ready to shut it down

(Anthony laughed)

Thomas : He is right. We were going to shut it down and join other agencies. You saved TRI but you just don't know that.

Kwalunga : TRI saved me and you guys know it.

Anthony : A toast to TRI

To TRI (We said in unison)

Thomas : And I want to propose a toast to Lunga.

(I chuckled)

To Lunga (They said in unison)

Kwalunga : Gentlemen please excuse me

(I went to my brothers)

Kwalunga : Enero is everything ok here?

Enero : Yeah bro. It nothing we can't handle

Kwalunga : Is Dante still giving you guys problems?

(He swallowed hard)

Enero : How do you know about Dante?

Kwalunga : You guys mentioned his name the first time we met.

Enero : Oh yeah. Dante is... was.. Don't worry about it bro.

Kwalunga : You killed him?

(He froze. I don't know why I said that but when he said "Is was" I just knew it)

Enero : Are you stalking us?

Kwalunga : I'm not but even if I was I don't see how is that a problem. Enero I'm your brother and whatever shit you guys are doing will definitely come back to us.

(Silence)

Kwalunga : Call Junio and Diciembre. I'll be upstairs

Anthony : Lunga is there a problem?

Kwalunga : Nothing I can't handle Caldo.
Nothing I can't handle.

(I went upstairs as soon as I got in. They walked in)

Kwalunga : Somebody explain what the hell is going on here?

Enero : You were right. We killed Dante and his guys are looking for us

Diciembre : If they find us.....we dead

Kwalunga : Nobody will die here. I don't care who Dante is. I don't want to know what you guys did. All I know is if someone touch my family....They are dead

(I looked at them)

Kwalunga : I kill everyone who messes up with me or my family. I kill without even thinking

twice family or not family. No compassion! No mercy!

Junio : ¿Dónde estuviste todo el tiempo?
(Where were you all along?)

Kwalunga : I was killing them. One by one

(We all laughed)

Diciembre : The Hlela Brothers have arrived
and together we are unstoppable (He raised
his beer) To Hlela brothers

To Hlela brothers.

Chapter 82

THE WEDDING DAY

(Our wedding was only for 20 Minutes. Thomas Anthony Ademaro and my brothers were my groomsmen. Tina Nicola Sthembela Mia and 2 other friends were Sky's bridesmaids. We had to add my brothers at the last minute but everything was a success. Sky looked so beautiful. Only her was wearing white. According to Italian tradition no one else is allowed to wear white except the bride. Her veil was very long. We didn't prepare our own vows. We walked out of the church and guests were throwing rice at us Sky said it symbolizes fertility.)

(We went to take pictures and later we went to Villa Miani for our wedding reception. Sky was carrying a small satin bag for guests to place money in. She said it is tradition. We threw sugared almonds to our guests as a thank you for attending. We danced and

after the whole ceremony Sky and I broke a glass vase. The number of fragments indicated the number of married years ahead. Everything was fascinating about Italian traditions)

Ladies and gentlemen may I have your attention please

(That was Thomas)

Thomas : Thank you. I was just waiting for the right moment to say this. Most of you know me as the CEO of True Red Investigators but I'm not a CEO because we are all equal at TRI. We are a team. Lunga is one of the most hard working and most dedicated team members at TRI and because of this guy TRI was awarded as best investigators of the year.

(Yes we did it. There was applause)

Thomas : Ladies and Gentlemen I've done my part at TRI and I'm old now so it is time for me to go and stay at home and look after my pregnant wife to be. Yes(He laughed) I can no longer handle all the hard work. It's time to hand over my duties to someone else.

Someone fresh and someone who loves his job more than I do and that can only be one person ladies and gentlemen. Kwalunga Hlela

Kwalunga : What?

Sky : Oh my God baby!!

(I couldn't believe it. Tina and Anthony hugged me)

Tina : You deserve this

Ademaro : You do my brother

Anthony : I want paid leave every week. Ok?

Thomas : Please help me welcome our new CEO of TRI. Kwalunga Hlela

Kwalunga : I'll think about it Caldo

(I laughed and stood up)

Kwalunga : Wow. I don't know what to say.

Diciembre : That's our brother everybody!!

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : Thank you. Thank you TRI for believing in me.....Phew!...I feel empty standing here without my other half. Sweetheart please come and join me

(There was applause. Sky smiled and stood next to me looking beautiful as ever. I kissed her. there was applause and whistling and there was silence. Total silence. I stopped kissing Sky and looked around)

(Boom!! Suffocate Das! He was just standing there with his hands cuffed and dragging a chain in his ankles. Two guards were with him. I know Selina told him that we were getting married)

Suffocate : Ti ho detto che ti stai scopando mia figlia E tu l'hai negato (I told you that you are fucking my daughter and you denied it)

(I swallowed the lump in my throat and looked at Sky who was sweating)

Kwalunga : I can explain.

Suffocate : There's no need. You have my blessings

Sponsored

Sky said it symbolizes fertility.)

(We went to take pictures and later we went to Villa Miani for our wedding reception. Sky was carrying a small satin bag for guests to place money in. She said it is tradition. We threw sugared almonds to our guests as a thank you for attending. We danced and after the whole ceremony Sky and I broke a glass vase. The number of fragments indicated the number of married years ahead. Everything was fascinating about Italian traditions)

Ladies and gentlemen may I have your attention please

(That was Thomas)

Thomas : Thank you. I was just waiting for the right moment to say this. Most of you know me as the CEO of True Red Investigators but I'm not a CEO because we are all equal at TRI. We are a team. Lunga is one of the most hard working and most dedicated team members at TRI and because of this guy TRI was awarded as best investigators of the year.

(Yes we did it. There was applause)

Thomas : Ladies and Gentlemen I've done my part at TRI and I'm old now so it is time for me to go and stay at home and look after my pregnant wife to be. Yes(He laughed) I can

no longer handle all the hard work. It's time to hand over my duties to someone else. Someone fresh and someone who loves his job more than I do and that can only be one person ladies and gentlemen. Kwalunga Hlela

Kwalunga : What?

Sky : Oh my God baby!!

(I couldn't believe it. Tina and Anthony hugged me)

Tina : You deserve this

Ademaro : You do my brother

Anthony : I want paid leave every week. Ok?

Thomas : Please help me welcome our new CEO of TRI. Kwalunga Hlela

Kwalunga : I'll think about it Caldo

(I laughed and stood up)

Kwalunga : Wow. I don't know what to say.

Diciembre : That's our brother everybody!!

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : Thank you. Thank you TRI for believing in me.....Phew!...I feel empty standing here without my other half. Sweetheart please come and join me

(There was applause. Sky smiled and stood next to me looking beautiful as ever. I kissed her. there was applause and whistling and there was silence. Total silence. I stopped kissing Sky and looked around)

(Boom!! Suffocate Das! He was just standing there with his hands cuffed and dragging a chain in his ankles. Two guards were with him. I know Selina told him that we were getting married)

Suffocate : Ti ho detto che ti stai scopando mia figlia E tu l'hai negato (I told you that you are fucking my daughter and you denied it)

(I swallowed the lump in my throat and looked at Sky who was sweating)

Kwalunga : I can explain.

Suffocate : There's no need. You have my blessings son.

(He smiled)

Suffocate : Principessa vieni a dare un abbraccio a papà (Princess come give daddy a hug)

Sky : papà (Daddy)

(She ran to Suffocate and they hugged. Selina joined. Suffocate really loved his daughter even when he was behind bars but still he came for his daughter's wedding. This is what I signed up for in this life. Love and Happiness)

(2 Months later)

(We had to postpone our traditional wedding because there were some things that had to be done to welcome my father Langa and my

brothers to the family. The day finally arrived but Sky wasn't feeling well. She was feeling drowsy and tired but our traditional wedding was a success. My beautiful wife looked beautiful in Isidwaba. Yes Sky Lakhanya Hlela was officially my wife)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart Thank you

Sky : No. Thank you my husband

(She looked weak and drained)

Kwalunga : Tomorrow I'm taking you to the doctor.

Sky : I'm going to be fine baby

Kwalunga : No. I'm not taking any chances

Sky : Ok fine

Kwalunga : Good. Get some rest sweetheart
It's been a long day.

Sky: Indeed. Where is Regalo and Leggero

Kwalunga : Somewhere with my brothers and
my sister

(She laughed)

Sky : About baba's car. You said it will be
delivered today

Kwalunga : Yeah. I've been trying to call
them and find out how far they are but I
can't get hold of them anymore. Enero was
trying to call them as well

Sky : They are probably on their way

Kwalunga : Can I get you anything? You haven't eaten all day

Sky : I'm not hungry baby

Kwalunga : Sweetheart come on. you have to eat.

Sky : I'll eat before we sleep. I promise

Kwalunga : Good

(I kissed her forehead)

Kwalunga : Let me go and ask Enero about these guys

Sky : Ok baby

(I bumped to Enero on my way out)

Enero : Bro They are here. You need to sign I don't know what.

Kwalunga : Where are they?

Enero : At the gate.

Kwalunga : And Baba?

Enero : He is inside the house

Kwalunga : Ok

(Mthunzi and Langa walked out of the house followed by maMyeni)

Mthunzi : Enero what is going on? What is that truck doing here?

Kwalunga : Baba omncane please follow me

(They all followed)

Kwalunga : Baba omncane I promised you a car and here it is.

Mthunzi : What?

(maMyeni was ululating)

Mthunzi : Hau Madlula. Hangala. Ngiyabonga mfan'wam

(It was a BMW 330i. Way better than his Uno. He literally cried and hugged me)

Kwalunga : You deserve this Baba.

Mthunzi : Ngiyabonga Kwalunga. Ngiyabonga Madlula

(I may have killed my own father but family meant everything to me)

Chapter 83

(The following day I took Sky to the doctor. I was scared. I've lost so much and seeing Sky looking so weak. Tore me apart)

Dr Khumalo : Mrs Hlela there is nothing wrong with you.

Kwalunga : What are you saying? Can't you see that she is sick?

Dr Khumalo : Yes and that's because she is pregnant and the first...

Kwalunga : Wait. You said she is what?

Dr Khumalo : You didn't know?

(Sky was just staring at the Doctor)

Sky : No. That's not possible. I'm infertile and every doctor I consulted confirmed that.

Dr Khumalo : You are 2 months pregnant Mrs Hlela. We can do an ultrasound if you are up for it

Kwalunga : Please doctor. Do it

Sky : Morgan there is no way that I'm pregnant. I don't want to hurt you with a stupid ultrasound

Kwalunga : Let's do it.

Dr Khumalo : I'll give you two some privacy and as soon as you are ready please let me know

Kwalunga : Dr Khumalo please. I'm ready

Sky : Baby please don't do this to yourself

Kwalunga : I'm a man Sky and I'll handle it.

Dr Khumalo : Mrs Hlela please get to that bed

Sky : Ok but this is a waste of time

(Sky lay in bed and I wasn't paying attention to anything else except that screen)

Dr Khumalo : Can you hear the heartbeat of your baby?

(Sky looked at me with her eyes wide open. I couldn't believe it)

Sky : Oh my God I'm pregnant. Baby I'm pregnant. Look at our baby

(Tears ran down my face)

Kwalunga : Oh my God (I muttered)

Dr Khumalo : This is the early shape of your baby. There is the gestational sac and here is the yolk sac.

(I squeezed Sky's hand and kissed her. This is a woman I love carrying our baby.

Kwakhanya. I'm definitely naming my baby Kwakhanya. The lord and my ancestors trusted me. U Nkulunkulu Ung'thembile Kwandiswa Kwalunga Kwakhanya. I'm now a father of 3)

(We went back home and I called a family meeting. Everyone seemed to be nervous)

Kwalunga : As you all know that my wife was not feeling well and today we decided to go and see the doctor.

Mthunzi : Kwalunga should we be worried?

Kwalunga : No baba omncane. A miracle has happened.

Langa : What do you mean?

Kwalunga : Bo Hlela. My wife is pregnant

What? (They all asked in unison)

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Yes she is 2 months pregnant

Langa : This is a miracle indeed

Diciembre : She is infertile

Mthunzi : Idlozi ke leli Hlela. Lisebenza kanje

Enero : It's time we learn isiZulu

Junio : I've already started my lessons with my sister

Kwalunga : You are lying Junio

Junio : Ngempela

(We all laughed. Junio is learning)

Diciembre : Bafo

Sponsored

we are happy for you.

Kwalunga : You are learning too Dicembre

(We all laughed)

Enero : I need to catch up

Kwalunga : Exactly!

(We laughed)

maMyeni : This is the best news ever.

Sthembele : I'm moving to Italy. maDas will need all the help since she is pregnant (She smiled)

Junio : Shoot your shots dadewethu. There is no more better time than this one

(We all laughed)

Kwalunga : And what about school dadewethu?

Sthembele : Eish! That.

Kwalunga : Whenever you are done. Italy is waiting for you

Sthembele : I know (She laughed)

Mthunzi : Johannesburg is not that bad.

Sthembele : It's boring without you and Mama.

Kwalunga : Ok fine. I'll see what I can do.

Enero : With that said. You can start packing up your bags and get your passport ready

Kwalunga : Bro come on (I laughed)

Enero : She is our sister and if she wants something she gets it.

Kwalunga : It will affect her studies

Sthembele : I don't mind starting all over again. I want to go for a different course anyway

Mthunzi : Oh and when were you going to tell us about that?

Sthembele : When the time was right

(We laughed. Sthe thinks she is smart)

Langa : I'm planning on moving back to South Africa. I want to be closer to home

Mthunzi : Bafo are you serious?

Langa : Yes. I'm getting old and I don't want to die in foreign countries

Junio : That's good dad.

Enero : Since everyone seems to be moving. I think it's time we consider moving to Italy. We want to be closer to our brother (He laughed)

Diciembre : Exactly. Spain is boring anyway

Mthunzi : The only thing that you guys should be considering is getting married and come back home

(Silence)

Langa : You are wasting your time my brother. These boys will not be getting married any time soon

Kwalunga : They will baba and I will make sure of that. I think it's time for them to move to Italy

Diciembre : Spain is not that bad

(We all laughed)

Daily New African Novels Download Here:

WWW.eBooksDuck.Com



**eBooks
Cat**

Chapter 84

(My family and I went back to Italy and my father and my brothers went back to Spain. Sthembele said she will finish her studies and then move to Italy. I think maMyeni changed her mind. Sky was always moody and it was driving me nuts)

Sky : Regalo how many times must I tell you to brush your teeth after you are done eating?

(Today it's one of those days)

Regalo : That's what I did Mah

Kwalunga : I've hired someone to help around the house. She is coming today

Sky : You just hired a woman to come to my house without my knowledge?

Kwalunga : Sweetheart it's not a big deal.

Sky : Nothing is a big deal to you Morgan.

(Lord give me strength)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry I should have spoken to you first.

Sky : Do whatever you want Morgan. That's what you always do

Kwalunga : Sweetheart you need help. You are pregnant

Sky : I'm pregnant not sick and definitely not crazy

(Who said anything about her being crazy?)

Kwalunga : Regalo take your bag. We need to go

Sky : I'm still talking to you Lunga!!

Kwalunga : And I'm right here Listening to you.

Sky : I'm not stupid. You just told your son to take his bag because you guys need to go. You want to go while I'm still talking to you.

Kwalunga : Regalo is getting late for school and I'm getting late for work

Sky : And I'm getting late for nothing except being sick because your baby that is

inside my stomach is making me sick!! (She yelled)

(Sky is really getting crazy now)

Kwalunga : I'm sorry about that

Sky : Don't be sorry. You made me pregnant. I'm sick because of you and this baby of yours

(She started crying. God what have I done?)

Kwalunga : Regalo I'll call a driver for you boy boy. Just for today because it's going to be a long day today

(He knows what I mean)

Regalo : I see Don't worry dad.

Sky : Just look. You and your son are gossip about me while I'm right here

Kwalunga : Sweetheart come on. No one is gossiping about you

(I called a driver for my son and he went to school. I had to call Anthony and let him know that I was going to be late again. I'm just glad that they understand. Leggero was always with Selina in Bolsena)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart what would you like to eat?

Sky : Nothing. Go to work Morgan. You love your job more than you love me and I understand

Kwalunga : I love you more than anything.
Come baby. Sit down and I'll make you
breakfast

(I picked her up and placed her on a couch)

Sky : Which cologne did you use?

Kwalunga : Ambra. Why?

Sky : It's making me sick. Please go and take
a shower. Use my body wash to get rid of
that smell

(What the fuck?)

Kwalunga : You know Khanya this is really
starting to... Ok fine I'll take a shower.

Sky : Just say it Lunga. I'm starting to
irritate you and you hate me. Say it

Kwalunga : I never said anything like that.

(I went upstairs and took off my clothes. Sky was getting on my nerves . I took a shower and used "my" body wash. She threw me my clothes in the shower)

Sky : I hate that cologne

(When did she get here?. I finished and went to our bedroom. She was sleeping)

Kwalunga : Aren't you going to eat anymore?

Sky : No

(I sighed and sat down next to her)

Sky : I want to be fine Morgan. I hate being pregnant and your baby is making me sick

Kwalunga : I'm sorry sweetheart

(I slept next to her and she lay her head on my chest)

Sky : Please don't leave me baby

Kwalunga : I won't sweetheart.

(Round one is over. Time for round two. We are getting there)

Sky : You promise?

Kwalunga : Yes Sweetheart

(She brushed my dick using her leg. Round two has begun)

Sky : I want you baby

(She started kissing me. I love this round. I undressed her and ran my fingers around her pussy. She was wet. I didn't waste any more time. I was inside. Her pussy slapped differently since she was pregnant. I could spend the whole day making love to her. I took her slow and gently. As crazy as she was I loved her infinitely and her pussy was driving me crazy)

(Ever since we found out that she was pregnant every time we finished having sex she fell asleep. That was my chance to go to work. I cleaned her up and went to work)

(At True Red)

Anthony : How is our pregnant wife?

Kwalunga : Crazy Crazy and more crazy. She is only 2 months pregnant and she is already crying about everything. She is always sick and she hates my col(I sighed) Caldo Crazy and more crazy. She is only 2 months pregnant and she is already crying about everything. She is always sick and she hates my col(I sighed) Caldo don't even think about getting Nicola pregnant bro.

(Tina and Thomas were laughing hard)

Kwalunga : I swear to God she is going to kill me one of these days.

Tina : I'll come and see her later

Kwalunga : Don't worry about bringing her anything. She doesn't eat and if I try to raise my concerns about that she tells me that it's my baby that is making her sick

(They laughed)

Anthony : Oh so it's your baby now?

Kwalunga : When she is sick it's my baby.
When she is angry with me it's her baby and
when everything is fine with her it's our
baby.

Tina : Oh God! I can't wait to see her (She
laughed)

Anthony : Thomas was also complaining about
Mia and you know what? I don't want a baby

(We laughed)

Tina : I need your signature on this Lunga.

Kwalunga : Oh so our investigation was a success?

Tina : They sent it this morning. Mrs Callo called in all excited.

Kwalunga : Well done team.

Anthony : Can I take my sick leave now?

Kwalunga : Are you sick?

Anthony : Not exactly but I know I'm going to be sick later today or tomorrow morning.

(I laughed)

Kwalunga : Before you get sick here. Here is the case. Mr Romano called to report 10 missing guns from his gun shop. He can't go

to the cops because he is selling these guns illegally

Anthony : We can't help him.

Tina : And why the hell not?

Anthony : He is illegally selling guns.

Kwalunga : And why do you seem bothered by that? Caldo listen to me. You are not a cop and you are not working for the Polizia di stato. You are working for True Red Investigators and here we get our job done here we investigate for people who want us to do so Who pay us to do so. Whether they run legal or illegal businesses We don't care We do our job. Caldo you will do your job as an agent for TRI and let Polizia di stato take care of who is running illegal business. Are we clear?

Anthony : Yes. I understand.

Kwalunga : Caldo look. As much as we appreciate these awards but the truth is TRI is about making money. We need money and look at how much Mr Romano is willing to pay us.

(Their eyes were wide open)

What? (They asked in unison)

Kwalunga : Exactly. We can't lose this money so we will do what we do best and find people who stole his guns. Caldo if the Polizia di stato come to us and pay us to investigate Mr Romano's illegal business we will do it and get him arrested.

(We laughed)

Tina : Yes. We are on Mr Romano's side until someone pays us to investigate him.

(We laughed. My phone rang. My wife)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart

Sky : Baby I'm sick

Kwalunga : I know sweetheart

(Tina and Anthony were laughing already)

Sky : Please come back home

Kwalunga : Baby I can't. I'll call your mother to...

Sky : No! I told her not to come here. I want to be with you Morgan

Kwalunga : I'm at work

Sky : Oh and it doesn't matter what I say to you?

Kwalunga : It matters

(I was busy looking at the footage that Mr Romano sent me.)

Sky : Morgan this pregnancy is not easy for me

Kwalunga : That's why I hired Giama to come and help you.

Sky : No!! I don't want Giama. I want my husband!!

Kwalunga : Sweetheart your husband is working on a very important case.

(She started crying. Can she just be 9 months pregnant already because this is too much. My desk phone rang and Anthony answered)

Kwalunga : Ok fine. I'm coming Sky

(I hung up)

Anthony : Lunga. Personal call

Kwalunga : Who is it?

Anthony : Regalo's principal

Kwalunga : What does she want (I whispered)

(Anthony shrugged)

Kwalunga : signora Russo

Principal : Mr Hlela Mi dispiace disturbarti
(I'm sorry to disturb you)

Kwalunga : Non c'è problema (No problem)

Kwalunga : Cosa posso fare per te? (What can
I do for you?)

(She cleared her throat)

Principal : si tratta di tuo figlio (It's about
your son)

(Oh Regalo. What have you done?)

Kwalunga : Che mi dici di lui? (What about
him?)

Principal : Il suo comportamento è cambiato ultimamente (His behavior has changed lately)

Kwalunga : cambiato? (Changed?)

Principal : Sarai in grado di venire a trovarmi? (Will you be able to come and see me)

Kwalunga : quando? (When?)

Principal : Oggi se è possibile (Today if it's possible)

(I sighed)

Kwalunga : God.....Ok fine

Principal : Grazie

(I hung up)

Kwalunga : I need to go to Regalo's school

Tina : Is everything ok?

Kwalunga : I don't know Harris

Anthony : Go Lunga. We will finish this tomorrow

(I looked at the footage again and something was so familiar)

Kwalunga : Tina please send this footage to my laptop.

Tina : On it.

Kwalunga : I need to go. When is Ademaro starting here?

Anthony : Tomorrow. He has to sort out a few things before he joins our team.

Kwalunga : Good. We need extra hands especially since Sky is pregnant and driving me crazy

(They laughed)

Kwalunga : I'm going now. As soon as you guys are done you can go home.

Anthony : For real?

Kwalunga : Unless you don't want to Caldo.

Anthony : You are the best

Tina : Best CEO we ever had.

(We laughed and I walked away. I went to Regalo's school)

Chapter 85

(On our way back from the school)

Kwalunga : Regalo what is going on with you? The principal is not happy with your behavior . The teachers are not happy with your behavior. The learners are not happy with your behavior. The whole school is not happy with your behavior. Why? Why my boy?

Regalo : I don't know what they want from me. I told them I don't want to talk. I don't want friends baba.... I want nothing.

Kwalunga : What's the problem?

Regalo : School is the problem baba. I don't feel safe anywhere without you

Kwalunga : Come on son. It's safe at school

Regalo : What if he comes.

Kwalunga : Who?

Regalo : No nothing baba

Kwalunga : Is someone giving you problems my boy?

Regalo : No Baba... No

Kwalunga : Good. School is very important

Regalo and you need to finish school

Regalo : I will

(I parked my car inside my garage)

Kwalunga : Good. Do you have any homework?

Regalo : No dad

Kwalunga : Ok. You can go in. I'll follow you now.

(I can't stop thinking about the people I saw on that footage and I was so sure that those were my brothers. How could they be so stupid?. I went inside)

Sky : You've finally decided to come home

Kwalunga : Sweetheart not now. Please

Sky : Instead of coming home when I needed you You decided to go and get your son from school.

Kwalunga : His principal called so I had to go to his school. Sky I'm here now so please sweetheart calm down.

Sky : Ha! Calm down? You said calm down?

Kwalunga : Jesuuuus. No I didn't baby

Sky : Why don't you go back to work because clearly you don't want to be here.

Kwalunga : I want to be here

Sky : No you don't!!!

Kwalunga : Just shut up Sky

(I went upstairs. I threw myself in bed and closed my eyes)

Sky : You don't love me anymore. Just say it

(Not this again)

Kwalunga : I love you

Sky : Stop lying to me!!!

Kwalunga : You asked me to come back home and I did. What more do I have to do now?

Sky : I called you 3 hours ago and you only came back now! (She yelled)

(I opened my eyes and sat up)

Kwalunga : I had to go and speak to Regalo's principal

Sky : Why didn't you tell me that!?

Kwalunga : I told you

Sky : Morgan

Sponsored

I'm not stupid!!

(She was screaming and I couldn't take it anymore)

Sky : Where do you think you are going?

Kwalunga : Out

Sky : Lunga!!!!

(I went to my car and drove to House of Arte)

Anya : Morgan

Kwalunga : Anya You good?

Anya : Yes what are you doing here?

Kwalunga : I need some peace. Can I use your office?

Anya : Yes of course. Is everything alright?

Kwalunga : Yeah

(I went to her office and she followed me)

Anya : Is everything ok at home?

Kwalunga : Uh!

Anya : I see. I'll give you some space

Kwalunga : Thank you

(She walked out. I opened my laptop and checked the footage that Tina sent to me and I was right. It was Diciembre and Junio. I called Diciembre)

Diciembre : Bro

Kwalunga : Don't bro me Diciembre. What have you done?

Diciembre : What are you talking about?

Kwalunga : I'm talking about the guns that you and Junio stole from Mr Romano's shop

(Silence)

Kwalunga : You guys are stupid

Diciembre : How do you know about that? Did Enero tell you about it?

Kwalunga : I saw the bloody footage and Romano is looking for you guys

Diciembre : What?

Kwalunga : Are you guys in Italy? Please be honest with me

Diciembre : We left the day before yesterday. We did not go back to Spain with our father. We had to do that

Kwalunga : You had to steal guns Just say it
Diciembre

Diciembre : Lunga we do what we have to do. That is the only thing we know. To steal and

kill. I'm sorry you had to find out the way you did.

Kwalunga : And now I have to clean up your mess?

Diciembre : I'm sorry bro. We needed the money to get Dante's guys out of our lives and we needed money fast

Kwalunga : You paid them to get them off your back?

Diciembre : We had no choice

Kwalunga : Then you are really stupid than I thought to think that money can get someone off your back. What if they come back for more money?

Diciembre : They won't

(Anya walked in)

Kwalunga : If you say so. I need to go

(I hung up)

Anya : I'm sorry to disturb you but I need to lock up. I have to go somewhere

Kwalunga : Somewhere?

Anya : Lunga I have a life.

Kwalunga : I see. Fine I'll pack this

Anya : Please do. I don't want to keep my man waiting

Kwalunga : Your man?

Anya : Yes (She rolled her eyes)

Kwalunga : Then why don't you help me pack these quickly so that we don't keep your.....

Man waiting

(I stood up)

Anya : Fine I'll help you

(She was busy packing my laptop inside my bag. I locked the door and walked closer behind her. I held her waist and kissed the back of her neck. I massage her nipples with my fingers. She moaned)

Kwalunga : Hurry up. Your man is waiting for you

Anya : He can wait but this cannot wait. (She whispered)

Daily New African Novels Download Here:

WWW.eBooksDuck.Com



eBooks
Cat

Chapter 86

8 YEARS LATER

CHRISTMAS DAY

(Our marriage has been full of ups and downs but we held it together. Sky gave birth to our beautiful baby girl Kwakhanya. She looked exactly like her mother. She talks a lot She is 8 Years now. Leggero will be turning 10 years in a few months and Regalo

was 21 years old and I don't know how that happened but Regalo's behavior was exactly like mine. He was just like me except that he brought different girls in my house. I wasn't that type)

Sky : Regalo I don't understand how you only come back home now. I told you to come back home early. Lunga your son didn't come back home again last night.

Kwakhanya : His girlfriend was h....

Regalo : Kwakhanya don't start. Please my sister

Leggero : She is right. Your girl came here yesterday Looking for you.

Kwakhanya : It wasn't that chubby one. It was that one with pink her

(Regalo looked at me then at Sky)

Regalo : She is my friend

Leggero : I found you kissing her the other day in your room

Regalo : Please excuse me. I need a bathroom

Kwalunga : Akwandiswe sit down!!

(He sighed)

Regalo : Baba I don't know what they are talking about.

Kwalunga : Akwandiswe how many times have I told you not to bring your girlfriends to my house?

Regalo : I didn't bring any girl here.

Kwalunga : Do you think I'm stupid?

Regalo : No baba

Kwalunga : Why didn't you sleep at home last night?

Regalo : I went out with my friends and it got late. I didn't have my keys with me so I didn't want to disturb you.

Sky : Ever since you started hanging out with the boys from next door you changed Regalo.

Regalo : That's not true Mah

Sky : Sweety I don't like what you are doing. I don't want you sleeping out because it's not safe. Ok baby?

Regalo : It won't happen again.

Kwalunga : I'm sure it won't.

Regalo : I'm sorry baba.

Kwalunga : Eat your food.

Sky : We want to open our presents

(We ate and opened our presents. I bought smartphones for Leggero and Kwakhanya. A necklace and a watch for my wife. A car for Regalo. My wife bought me a new laptop because I was complaining a lot about my old one. I don't know what she bought for our kids but they were happy)

Regalo : You bought me a car dad. Wow A car!!. I have a car

(Everyone was so excited. My family is everything)

Kwalunga : I don't want you to go all night with that car.

Sky : Tell him baby.

Regalo : I won't. Baba ngiyabonga

Kwalunga : It's ok son

(There was a knock on the door and the door opened. A man walked in and stood there)

Regalo : What the fuck are you doing here?

Kwalunga : Regalo how do you know this man?

Man : His father is my brother. Hello family

Regalo : Get out!!! Get out!!!

Kwalunga : My boy please calm down

Regalo : No baba. This man needs to go

Kwalunga : Mr.... What is your name?

Man : Pike. You don't remember me. We were together in Rebibbia Prison

(Damn I remember him)

Kwalunga : Pike

Pike : Kwalunga

Regalo : Baba you know this bastard?

Pike : Easy son

Regalo : I'm not your son. Get out!!

Sky : Sweety please calm down

Regalo : No Mah. If you welcome this man to this house then I will go and I will never come back.

Kwalunga : Pike I think you need to go.

Pike : Fine. I just wanted to say Merry Christmas

(He laughed and walked out)

Sky : Are you ok son? Who was that?

Regalo : Nobody. Please excuse me

(He ran upstairs. Sky wanted to follow him)

Kwalunga : Leave him Sweetheart. He will be fine.

Sky : Yeah. I guess

(My phone rang. Junio)

Kwalunga : Bafo

Junio : Someone took Enero. He is gone bro.
Our brother is gone

Kwalunga : Junio calm down

Junio : We are in Venice. Lunga Please come.

Kwalunga : How many times have I told you to stay away from Italy?

Junio : Enero is gone!!! Don't you get it?

Kwalunga : On my way.

(I hung up and went upstairs to get my gun and walked back)

Kwalunga : Sweetheart I need to go

Sky : No Morgan. You can't leave me alone with the kids. You saw that man. What if he comes back?

Kwalunga : You not alone. Akwandiswe is upstairs. I need to go to Venice My brother's need me.

Sky : What happened?

Kwalunga : Enero is in danger. I'll explain everything when I come back

Sky : Ok. Ok go

Kwalunga : If anything happens call Caldo.

Sky : We are going to be fine

Kwakhanya : Daddy where are you going?

Kwalunga : I'll come back now my princess.

Leggero I'll be back boy boy.

Leggero : Ok baba

(I kissed Sky and walked out)

(I drove like a maniac to Venice and I made it in 4 hours. Junio and Diciembre were waiting. We were all wearing black like it something we planned but we didn't. They were smoking)

Kwalunga : What happened?

Diciembre : Dante is alive

Kwalunga : Didn't you tell me that you killed him?

Junio : We thought he was dead but those bastards demanded money from us to move him here.

Kwalunga : When last did you see Enero?

Diciembre : Last night

Kwalunga : And you're only telling me about it today?

Junio : Lunga

Sponsored

something we planned but we didn't. They were smoking)

Kwalunga : What happened?

Diciembre : Dante is alive

Kwalunga : Didn't you tell me that you killed him?

Junio : We thought he was dead but those bastards demanded money from us to move him here.

Kwalunga : When last did you see Enero?

Diciembre : Last night

Kwalunga : And you're only telling me about it today?

Junio : Lunga you know our brother. We thought maybe he was fucking some girl somewhere but Dante sent me a video of his guys beating up Enero.

Diciembre : That bastard is going to kill our brother if we don't give him the money he requested.

Kwalunga : Are you sure that he is with Enero in his house?

Junio : Yes. He told us to go and get his money and soon as we give him the money he will give us Enero.

Kwalunga : He is not getting a cent from us.
Take me to his house

(I opened the car boot and got inside)

Junio : What are you doing?

Kwalunga : When we get there Nobody will
see me. You got the money?

Junio : Not enough

Kwalunga : Good. You will go in while I stay
inside this boot. After a few minutes I will
get in. Got it?

Junio : Sure but what about your car? Are
you going to leave it here?

Kwalunga : Don't worry about my c... wait

(I got out of the boot and took out my petrol from my car)

Diciembre : Is that petrol?

Kwalunga : No. It's juice

(They laughed. I got back inside the boot)

Kwalunga : This car boot smells terrible.
Who's car is this?

(They laughed)

Junio : Friend

Kwalunga : Your friend is a pig. Close this boot and let's go

(Diciembre drove off with me at the back of the car. Finally he stopped. I called him Junio .)

Kwalunga : Have we arrived?

Junio : Yes. they are coming to open the gate

Kwalunga : How many?

Junio : 2

Kwalunga : Good Go in with them. I'll follow in the next 15 minutes

Junio : Are you ok back there?

Kwalunga : I'll survive. Now go

(He hung up and unlocked the car boot. There was silence. They were gone. I got out of the boot. It was already dark. I cocked my gun and took my petrol. Dante's house looked like a cabin and it was in the middle of nowhere. I started pouring petrol all around his house and walked in where they all entered. They were arguing in one of the rooms)

Junio : I told you that we are still trying to get more money

Man : As soon as you have my money I will give you your brother. Look at him. he is fine

(I guess that Dante)

Diciembre : You can't keep him here Dante. He will bleed to death

Dante : Then give me my money.

(I kicked down the door and as soon as I walked in Diciembre and Junio took out their guns and started shooting. Bang! bang! bang! Gunshots. Silence)

Kwalunga : Enero are you ok?

(He laughed softly)

Enero : It's just a few bruises. Nothing hectic

Diciembre : You almost died

Enero : None of the Hlela's die. We multiply

(Junio looked at Dante)

Junio : He is dead this time

Diciembre : Let's get out of here

(I took out lighter as soon as we got out. By the time we got to the car his house was on fire. Diciembre and Junio were shocked)

Enero : Lunga what the hell?

Kwalunga : Just making sure that he really dies this time.

(The flames got bigger)

Junio : Oh my God!

Kwalunga : Cenere alla Cenere

(They looked at me)

Kwalunga : Let's get out of here.

(We were 3 hours away from Venice when I received a call from Anthony. I got nervous)

Kwalunga : Caldo talk to me

Anthony : Regalo is missing. You need to come back home

(That was the worst day of my life)

Kwalunga : What do you mean?

Anthony : Just get here Lunga.

(He hung up)

Kwalunga : Diciembre let me drive

Junio : What happened?

Kwalunga : My son is missing. Pike took my son. I want to drive

Enero : Bro calm down

(Diciembre allowed me to drive. I had to drive as fast as I could)

Junio : Please don't kill us

(They were all complaining about my speed and I didn't care. I wanted to go and save my son. I couldn't imagine my life without that boy. I had to save my son)

(We arrived at Anthony's house. Sky was crying)

Sky : Morgan you have to find our son. You have to

Kwalunga : What happened Khanya. I left him home

Sky : He went upstairs and then he came back. We went to bed and we left him watching a movie. He was fine baby. I took our kids to bed... He.. He... (She paused) I went back downstairs and the lights were off. I switched them on and Regalo was not there. His car was not there

(I was pacing the room)

Anthony : Enero what happened? You need a doctor

Kwalunga : It was Pike. Pike took my son and I'm going to kill him

Junio : Who is Pike?

Kwalunga : A man I'm going to kill

Anthony : Dr Ferrari is coming

(When did he call him? I was losing my mind)

Diciembre : Lunga we need to go and find
Regalo

Kwalunga : Yeah Yeah. Sky you need to stay
here and I'll..... What if my son is dead?

Junio : Bro you need to calm down and be
strong

Diciembre : Anthony we need to go. Where
are the kids?

Anthony : Upstairs Sleeping.

Diciembre : Good. Sky and Enero will stay here and as soon as we find Regalo we will come back here. Is that fine with you?

Anthony : Of course. We are going to be fine

Kwalunga : Let's go

(Sky hugged me)

Sky : I love you. Please find our boy

Kwalunga : I will Sweetheart

Anthony : Maybe we should call the cops.

Junio : No. No cops

Kwalunga : Yeah. Not for now

Anthony : Please be careful.

Sky : Maybe you should go to our house first and check if he is not there. Maybe he came back home.... Maybe he (She started breaking down again)

Kwalunga : I'll find him. I promise

(We walked out and we went to my house first. I was hoping that I'll find something. The lights were on and the door was opened. I ran inside and there was Regalo sitting on stairs smoking. His eyes were red. There was a 5lt of petrol next to him)

Kwalunga : Son

Regalo : I killed him baba

(I froze)

Kwalunga : What?

Regalo : I killed Pike. I killed my uncle. I burned him alive just like he did to my father.

(Diciembre and Junio sat down)

Regalo : My father was the only person I had and my uncle came to his house and burned him alive..... I was there. I watched the house burn down with my father inside. I waited for so long to see this day

Kwalunga : You didn't have to kill him

Regalo : That's what happens when you've been angry for too long. As soon as you recover all your strength you strike. If you

want me to leave your house I'll understand.
I'm fucked up baba

Kwalunga : As fucked up as you are but I love you infinitely and I will do anything to protect you. You are my son my first born and I can't imagine my life without you.

(I'm responsible for Regalo's behavior. My father Mzwandile told me to fix this boy. I told him to kill. I can't blame him for what he did. I did the same thing and right now I understand what he is going through. This is my son and I love him. I will do anything for him)

Junio : You killed your uncle?

Regalo : And I don't regret it. I want to kill him all over again for everything he put me through. I am Akwandiswe Hlela and here we

do anything to protect ourselves. We kill without thinking twice. Family or not We kill.No compassion! No mercy!

(I don't know why but I'm proud of my son right now.)

Regalo : You raised me not knowing that you were raising yourself. You raised a boy who went through the same thing that you went through. I was carrying so much anger baba and I knew it would end up like this. You are Kwalunga Hlela The Stoic baba and you raised a Stoic. Ngiyabonga baba.

THE END

KWALUNGA HLELA THE STOIC

BY NOMFUNDO MBHELE

Thanks for reading. God bless you

For daily latest books please visit

<https://novelsguru.com/>